AMELIA.

BY

HENRY FIELDING.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

EMBELLISHED WITH ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. I.

FELICES TER ET AMPLIUS,
QUOS IRRUPTA TENET COPULA.

Γυναικὸς οὐδὲν χρῆμ᾽ ἀνὴρ ληΐζεται
Ἐσθλῆς ἄμεινον, οὐδὲ ῥίγιον κακῆς.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR C. COOKE, No. 17,
PATER-NOSTER-ROW.

TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOGI'S SARASWATI MAHAL
992

RAL[illegible]

SIR,

THE following book is sincerely designed to promote the cause of virtue, and to expose some of the most glaring evils, as well public as private, which at present infest the country; though there is scarce, as I remember, a single stroke of satire aimed at any one person throughout the whole.

The best man is the properest patron of such an attempt. This, I believe, will be readily granted; nor will the publick voice, I think, be more divided, to whom they shall give that appellation. Should a letter, indeed, be thus inscribed, DETUR OPTIMO, there are few persons who would think it wanted any other direction.

I will not trouble you with a preface concerning the work; nor endeavour to obviate any criticisms which may be made on it. The good-natured reader, if his heart should be here affected, will be inclined to pardon many faults for the pleasure he will receive from a tender

Nor will I aſſume the fulſome ſtile of common dedicators. I have not their uſual deſign in this epiſtle; nor will I borrow their language. Long, very long, may it be, before a moſt dreadful circumſtance ſhall make it poſſible for any pen to draw a juſt and true character of yourſelf, without incurring a ſuſpicion of flattery in the boſoms of the malignant! This taſk, therefore, I ſhall defer till that day (if I ſhould be ſo unfortunate as ever to ſee it) when, every good man ſhall pay a tear for the ſatisfaction of his curioſity; a day which at preſent, I believe, there is but one good man in the world who can think of with unconcern.

Accept then, Sir, this ſmall token of that love, that gratitude, and that reſpect, with which I ſhall always eſteem it my GREATEST HONOUR to be,

SIR,

Your moſt obliged,

And moſt obedient,

Humble Servant,

HENRY FIELDING.

AMELIA.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Containing the exordium, &c.

THE various accidents which befel a very worthy couple, after their uniting in the ſtate of matrimony, will be the ſubject of the following hiſtory. The diſtreſſes which they waded through, were ſome of them ſo exquiſite, and the incidents which produced theſe ſo extraordinary, that they ſeemed to require not only the utmoſt malice, but the utmoſt invention which ſuperſtition hath ever attributed to FORTUNE: though whether any ſuch being interfered in the caſe, or indeed, whether there be any ſuch being in the univerſe, is a matter which I by no means preſume to determine in the affirmative. To ſpeak a bold truth, I am, after much mature deliberation, inclined to ſuſpect, that the public voice hath, in all ages, done much injuſtice to Fortune, and hath convicted her of many facts in which ſhe had not the leaſt concern. I queſtion much whether we may not, by natural means, account for the ſucceſs of knaves, and the calamities of fools, with all the miſeries in which men of ſenſe ſometimes involve themſelves, by quitting the directions of prudence, and following the blind guidance of a predominant paſſion: in ſhort, for all the ordinary phenomena which are imputed to Fortune; whom, perhaps, men accuſe with no leſs abſurdity in life, than a bad player complains of ill luck at a game of cheſs.

But if men are ſometimes guilty of laying improper blame on this imaginary being, they are altogether as apt to make her amends, by aſcribing to her honours which ſhe as little deſerves. To retrieve the

ill consequences of a foolish conduct, and by struggling manfully with distress to subdue it, is one of the noblest efforts of wisdom and virtue: whoever, therefore, calls such a man fortunate, is guilty of no less impropriety in speech, than he would be, who should call the statuary or the poet fortunate, who carved a Venus, or who wrote an Iliad.

Life may as properly be called an art as any other; and the great incidents in it are no more to be considered as mere accidents, than the several members of a fine statue, or a noble poem. The critics in all these are not content with seeing any thing to be great, without knowing why and how it came to be so. By examining carefully the several gradations which conduce to bring every model to perfection, we learn truly to know that science in which the model is formed: as histories of this kind, therefore, may properly be called models of HUMAN LIFE; so by observing minutely the several incidents which tend to the catastrophe or completion of the whole, and the minute causes whence those incidents are produced, we shall best be instructed in this most useful of all arts, which I call *the art of life.*

CHAP. II.

The History sets out. Observations on the excellency of the English Constitution; and curious examinations before a Justice of Peace.

ON the first of April in the year ------, the watchmen of a certain parish (I know not particularly which) within the liberty of Westminster, brought several persons, whom they had apprehended the preceding night, before Jonathan Thrasher, Esq. one of the justices of the peace for that liberty.

But here, reader, before we proceed to the trials of these offenders, we shall, after our usual manner, premise some things which it may be necessary for thee to know.

It hath been observed, I think, by many, as well as the celebrated writer of *Three Letters,* that no human

human inſtitution is capable of conſummate perfection. An obſervation which, perhaps, that writer at leaſt gathered from diſcovering ſome defects in the polity even of this well-regulated nation. And, indeed, if there ſhould be any ſuch defect in a conſtitution which my Lord Coke long ago told us, 'the wiſdom of all the wiſe men in the world, if they had 'all met together at one time, could not have equal'led;' which ſome of our wiſeſt men, who were met together long before, ſaid, was too good to be altered in any particular; and which, nevertheleſs, hath been mending ever ſince, by a very great number of the ſaid wiſe men: if, I ſay, this conſtitution ſhould be imperfect, we may be allowed, I think, to doubt whether any ſuch faultleſs model can be found among the inſtitutions of men.

It will probably be objected, that the ſmall imperfections which I am about to produce do not lie in the laws themſelves, but in the ill execution of them; but, with ſubmiſſion, this appears to me to be no leſs an abſurdity, than to ſay of any machine that it is excellently made, though incapable of performing it's functions. Good laws ſhould execute themſelves in a well-regulated ſtate: at leaſt, if the ſame legiſlature which provides the laws doth not provide for the execution of them, they act as Graham would do, if he ſhould form all the parts of a clock in the moſt exquiſite manner, yet put them ſo together that the clock could not go. In this caſe, ſurely we might ſay, that there was a ſmall defect in the conſtitution of the clock.

To ſay the truth, Graham would ſoon ſee the fault, and would eaſily remedy it. The fault, indeed, could be no other, than that the parts were improperly diſpoſed.

Perhaps, reader, I have another illuſtration, which will ſet my intention in ſtill a clearer light before you. Figure to yourſelf then a family, the maſter of which ſhould diſpoſe of the ſeveral œconomical offices in the following

following manner, viz. ſhould put his butler in the coach-box, his ſteward behind his coach, his coachman in the butlery, and his footman in the ſtewardſhip; and in the ſame ridiculous manner ſhould miſemploy the talents of every other ſervant; it is eaſy to ſee what a figure ſuch a family muſt make in the world.

As ridiculous as this may ſeem, I have often conſidered ſome of the lower offices in our civil government to be diſpoſed of in this very manner. To begin, I think, as low as I well can, with the watchmen in our metropolis; who being to guard our ſtreets by night from thieves and robbers, an office which at leaſt requires ſtrength of body, are choſen out of thoſe poor, old, decrepid people, who are, from their want of bodily ſtrength, rendered incapable of getting a livelihood by work. Theſe men, armed only with a pole, which ſome of them are ſcarce able to lift, are to ſecure the perſons and houſes of his majeſty's ſubjects from the attacks of gangs of young, bold, ſtout, deſperate, and well-armed villains.

Quæ non viribus iſtis
Munera conveniunt.

If the poor old fellows ſhould run away from ſuch enemies, no one, I think, can wonder; unleſs it be, that they were able to make their eſcape.

The higher we proceed among our public officers and magiſtrates, the leſs defects of this kind will, perhaps, be obſervable. Mr. Thraſher, however, the juſtice before whom the priſoners above-mentioned were now brought, had ſome few imperfections in his magiſtratical capacity. I own, I have been ſometimes inclined to think, that this office of a juſtice of peace requires ſome knowledge of the law; for this ſimple reaſon, becauſe in every caſe which comes before him, he is to judge and act according to law. Again, as theſe laws are contained in a great variety of books, the ſtatutes which relate to the office of a juſtice of peace, making of themſelves at leaſt two

large

large volumes in folio; and that part of his jurisdiction which is founded on the common law being dispersed in above a hundred volumes, I cannot conceive how this knowledge should be acquired without reading; and yet, certain it is, Mr. Thrasher never read one syllable of the matter.

This perhaps was a defect; but this was not all: for where mere ignorance is to decide a point between two litigants, it will always be an even chance whether it decides right or wrong; but sorry am I to say, right was often in a much worse situation than this, and wrong hath often had five hundred to one on his side before that magistrate; who, if he was ignorant of the law of England, was yet well versed in the laws of nature. He perfectly well understood that fundamental principle so strongly laid down in the Institutes of the learned Rochefaucault, by which the duty of self-love is so strongly enforced, and every man is taught to consider himself as the centre of gravity, and to attract all things thither. To speak the truth plainly, the justice was never indifferent in a cause, but when he could get nothing on either side.

Such was the justice to whose tremendous bar Mr. Gotobed the constable, on the day above-mentioned, brought several delinquents, who, as we have said, had been apprehended by the watch for divers outrages.

The first who came upon his trial was as bloody a spectre as ever the imagination of a murderer or a tragic poet conceived. This poor wretch was charged with a battery by a much stouter man than himself; indeed, the accused person bore about him some evidence that he had been in an affray, his cloaths being very bloody: but certain open sluices on his own head sufficiently shewed whence all the scarlet stream had issued; whereas the accuser had not the least mark or appearance of any wound. The justice asked the defendant, what he meant by breaking

ing the king's peace? to which he anſwered---'Upon 'my ſhoul, I do love the king very well, and I have 'not been after breaking any thing of his that I do 'know: but upon my ſhoul, this man hath brake 'my head, and my head did brake his ſtick; that is 'all, gra.' He then offered to produce ſeveral witneſſes againſt this improbable accuſation; but the juſtice preſently interrupted him, ſaying, 'Sirrah, 'your tongue betrays your guilt. You are an Iriſh-'man; and that is always ſufficient evidence with 'me.'

The ſecond criminal was a poor woman, who was taken up by the watch as a ſtreet-walker. It was alledged againſt her, that ſhe was found walking the ſtreets after twelve o'clock, and the watchman declared, he believed her to be a common ſtrumpet. She pleaded in her defence, (as was really the truth) that ſhe was a ſervant, and was ſent by her miſtreſs, who was a little ſhop-keeper, and upon the point of delivery, to fetch a midwife; which ſhe offered to prove by ſeveral of the neighbours, if ſhe was allowed to ſend for them. The juſtice aſked her why ſhe had not done it before; to which ſhe anſwered, ſhe had no money, and could get no meſſenger. The juſtice then called her ſeveral ſcurrilous names; and declaring ſhe was guilty, within the ſtatute of ſtreet-walking, ordered her to Bridewell for a month.

A genteel young man and woman were then ſet forward, and a very grave-looking perſon ſwore he caught them in a ſituation which we cannot as particularly deſcribe here, as he did before the magiſtrate; who, having received a wink from his clerk, declared with much warmth that the fact was incredible and impoſſible. He preſently diſcharged the accuſed parties, and was going, without any evidence, to commit the accuſer for perjury; but this the clerk diſſuaded him from, ſaying, he doubted whether a juſtice of peace had any ſuch power. The juſtice at firſt differed in opinion; and ſaid, he had ſeen a man

ſtand

ſtand in the pillory about perjury; nay, he had known a man in gaol for it too; and how came he there, if he was not committed thither? 'Why that is true, 'Sir,' anſwered the clerk; 'and yet I have been told 'by a very great lawyer, that a man cannot be com-'mitted for perjury before he is indicted; and the 'reaſon is, I believe, becauſe it is not againſt the 'peace before the indictment makes it ſo.'---'Why, 'that may be,' cries the juſtice; 'and indeed perjury 'is but ſcandalous words, and I know a man can't 'have no warrant for thoſe, unleſs you put for rioting* 'them into the warrant.'

The witneſs was now about to be diſcharged, when the lady whom he had accuſed declared ſhe would ſwear the peace againſt him; for that he had called her a whore ſeveral times. 'Oho! you will ſwear 'the peace, Madam, will you?' cries the juſtice. 'Give her the peace preſently---and pray, Mr. Con-'ſtable ſecure the priſoner, now we have him, while 'a warrant is made to take him up.' All which was immediately performed; and the poor witneſs, for want of ſureties, was ſent to priſon.

A young fellow, whoſe name was Booth, was now charged with beating the watchman in the execution of his office, and breaking his lantern. This was

* *Opus eſt interprete.* By the laws of England, abuſive words are not puniſhable by the magiſtrate; ſome commiſſioners of the peace, therefore, when one ſcold hath applied to them for a warrant againſt another, from a too eager deſire of doing juſtice, have conſtrued a little harmleſs ſcolding into a riot, which is in law an outrageous breach of the peace, committed by ſeveral perſons, by three at the leaſt; nor can a leſs number be convicted of it. Under this word *rioting* or *riotting* (for I have ſeen it ſpelt both ways) many thouſands of old women have been arreſted and put to expence, ſometimes in priſon, for a little intemperate uſe of their tongues. This practice began to decreaſe in the year 1749.

depoſed

depoſed by two witneſſes; and the ſhattered remains of a broken lantern, which had been long preſerved for the ſake of it's teſtimony, were produced to corroborate the evidence. The juſtice, perceiving the criminal to be but ſhabbily dreſſed, was going to commit him without aſking any farther queſtions. At length, however, at the earneſt requeſt of the accuſed, the worthy magiſtrate ſubmitted to hear his defence. The young man then alledged, as was in reality the caſe, that as he was walking home to his lodging, he ſaw two men in the ſtreet cruelly beating a third, upon which he ſtopped and endeavoured to aſſiſt the perſon who was ſo unequally attacked; that the watch came up during the affray, and took them all four into cuſtody; that they were immediately carried to the round-houſe, where the two original aſſailants, who appeared to be men of fortune, found means to make up the matter, and were diſcharged by the conſtable; a favour which he himſelf, having no money in his pocket, was unable to obtain. He utterly denied having aſſaulted any of the watchmen, and ſolemnly declared, that he was offered his liberty at the price of half-a-crown.

Though the bare word of an offender can never be taken againſt the oath of his accuſer; yet the matter of this defence was ſo pertinent, and delivered with ſuch an air of truth and ſincerity, that had the magiſtrate been endued with much ſagacity, or had he been very moderately gifted with another quality, very neceſſary to all who are to adminiſter juſtice, he would have employed ſome labour in croſs-examining the watchmen; at leaſt he would have given the defendant the time he deſired to ſend for the other perſons who were preſent at the affray; neither of which he did. In ſhort, the magiſtrate had too great an honour for Truth to ſuſpect that ſhe ever appeared in ſordid apparel; nor did he ever ſully his ſublime notions of that virtue, by uniting them with the mean ideas of poverty and diſtreſs.

There

There remained now only one prisoner, and that was the poor man himself in whose defence the last mentioned culprit was engaged. His trial took but a very short time. A cause of battery and broken lantern was instituted against him, and proved in the same manner; nor would the justice hear one word in defence: but though his patience was exhausted, his breath was not; for against this last wretch he poured forth a great many vollies of menaces and abuse.

The delinquents were then all dispatched to prison, under a guard of watchmen; and the justice and the constable adjourned to a neighbouring ale-house, to take their morning repast.

CHAP. III.

Containing the inside of a Prison.

MR. Booth (for we shall not trouble you with the rest) was no sooner arrived in the prison, than a number of persons gathered round him, all demanding *garnish*; to which Mr. Booth not making a ready answer, as indeed he did not understand the word, some were going to lay hold of him, when a person of apparent dignity came up, and insisted that no one should affront the gentleman. This person then, who was no less than the master or keeper of the prison, turning towards Mr. Booth, acquainted him that it was the custom of the place for every prisoner, upon his first arrival there, to give something to the former prisoners to make them drink. This, he said, was what they called garnish; and concluded with advising his new customer to draw his purse upon the present occasion. Mr. Booth answered, that he would very readily comply with this laudable custom, was it in his power, but that in reality he had not a shilling in his pocket; and what was worse, he had not a shilling in the world. 'Oho! if that be the case,' cries the keeper, 'it is another matter, and I have nothing to 'say.' Upon which he immediately departed, and left poor Booth to the mercy of his companions; who, without loss of time, applied themselves to *uncasing*,

as they termed it, and with ſuch dexterity, that his coat was not only ſtripped off, but out of ſight in a minute.

Mr. Booth was too weak to reſiſt, and too wiſe to complain of this uſage. As ſoon, therefore, as he was at liberty, and declared free of the place, he ſummoned his philoſophy, of which he had no inconſiderable ſhare, to his aſſiſtance, and reſolved to make himſelf as eaſy as poſſible under his preſent circumſtances.

Could his own thoughts indeed have ſuffered him a moment to forget where he was, the diſpoſitions of the other priſoners might have induced him to believe that he had been in a happier place; for much the greater part of his fellow-ſufferers, inſtead of wailing and repining at their condition, were laughing, ſinging, and diverting themſelves with various kinds of ſports and gambols.

The firſt perſon who accoſted him was called Blear-eyed Moll; a woman of no very comely appearance. Her eye (for ſhe had but one) whence ſhe derived her nick-name, was ſuch as that nick name beſpoke: beſides which, it had two remarkable qualities; for firſt, as if Nature had been careful to provide for her own defect, it conſtantly looked towards her blind ſide; and, ſecondly, the ball conſiſted almoſt entirely of white, or rather yellow, with a little grey ſpot in the corner, ſo ſmall, that it was ſcarce diſcernible. Noſe ſhe had none; for Venus, envious perhaps at her former charms, had carried off the griſtly part; and ſome earthly damſel, perhaps from the ſame envy, had levelled the bone with the reſt of her face: indeed it was far beneath the bones of her cheeks, which roſe proportionably higher than the uſual. About half a dozen ebony teeth fortified that large and long canal which Nature had cut from ear to ear, at the bottom of which was a chin, prepoſterouſly ſhort, Nature having turned up the bottom inſtead of ſuffering it to grow to it's due length.

Her

Her body was well adapted to her face; ſhe meaſured full as much round the middle as from head to foot; for beſides the extreme breadth of her back, her vaſt breaſts had long ſince forſaken their native home, and had ſettled themſelves a little below the girdle.

I wiſh certain actreſſes on the ſtage, when they are to perform ch acters of no amiable caſt, would ſtudy to dreſs t ſel. s with the propriety with which Blear-eyed Moll was now arrayed. For the ſake of our ſqueamiſh reader, we ſhall not deſcend to particulars. Let it ſuffice to ſay, nothing more ragged, or more dirty, was ever emptied out of the round-houſe at St. Giles's.

We have taken the more pains to deſcribe this perſon, for two remarkable reaſons: the one is, that this unlovely creature was taken in the fact with a very pretty young fellow; the other, which is more productive of moral leſſon, is, that however wretched her fortune may appear to the reader, ſhe was one of the merrieſt perſons in the whole priſon.

Blear-eyed Moll then came up to Mr. Booth, with a ſmile, or rather grin on her countenance, and aſked him for a dram of gin; and when Booth aſſured her that he not a penny of money, ſhe replied---'D---n 'your eyes, I thought by your look you had been a 'clever fellow, and upon the ſnaffling lay* at leaſt; 'but, d---n your body and eyes, I find you are ſome 'ſneaking budge raſcal †.' She then launched forth a volley of dreadful oaths, interlarded with language not proper to be repeated here; and was going to lay hold on poor Booth, when a tall priſoner, who had been very earneſtly eyeing Booth for ſome time, came up, and taking her by the ſhoulder, flung her off at ſome diſtanc curſing her for a b---h, and bidding her let the gentleman alone.

This perſon was not himſelf of the moſt inviting aſpect. He was long-viſaged, and pale, with a red

* A cant term for robbery on the highway.

† Another cant term for pilfering.

beard of above a fortnight's growth. He was attired in a brownish black coat, which would have shewed more holes than it did, had not the linen which appeared through it been entirely of the same colour with the cloth.

This gentleman, whose name was Robinson, addressed himself very civilly to Mr. Booth, and told him he was sorry to see one of his appearance in that place: 'For as to your being without your coat, 'Sir,' says he, 'I can easily account for that; and 'indeed dress is the least part which distinguishes a 'gentleman.' At which words, he cast a significant look at his own coat, as if he desired they should be applied to himself. He then proceeded in the following manner.

'I perceive, Sir, you are but just arrived in this 'dismal place, which is indeed rendered more detestable by the wretches who inhabit it, than by any 'other circumstance; but even these a wise man will 'soon bring himself to bear with indifference: for 'what is, is; and what must be, must be. The 'knowledge of this, which, simple as it appears, is 'in truth the height of all philosophy, renders a 'wise man superior to every evil which can befal him. 'I hope, Sir, no very dreadful accident is the cause 'of your coming hither; but whatever it was, you 'may be assured it could not be otherwise: for all 'things happen by an inevitable fatality; and a man 'can no more resist the impulse of Fate, than a 'wheelbarrow can the force of it's driver.'

Besides the obligation which Mr. Robinson had conferred on Mr. Booth, in delivering him from the insults of Blear-eyed Moll, there was something in the manner of Robinson, which, notwithstanding the meanness of his dress, seemed to distinguish him from the crowd of wretches who swarmed in those regions; and above all, the sentiments which he had just declared very nearly coincided with those of Mr. Booth. This gentleman was what they call a free-thinker; that

that is to ſay, a deiſt; or, perhaps, an atheiſt: for though he did not abſolutely deny the exiſtence of a God, yet he entirely denied his providence. A doctrine which, if it is not downright atheiſm, hath a direct tendency towards it; and, as Dr. Clarke obſerves, may be ſoon driven into it. And as to Mr. Booth, though he was in his heart an extreme well-wiſher to religion, (for he was an honeſt man) yet his notions of it were very ſlight and uncertain. To ſay truth, he was in the wavering condition ſo finely deſcribed by Claudian---

labefacta cadebat
Religio, cauſæque viam non ſponte *ſequebar*
Alterius; vacuo quæ currere ſemina motu
Affirmat; magnumque novas per inane figuras
Fortuna, non arte, regi; quæ numina ſenſu
Ambiguo, vel nulla putat, vel neſcia noſtri.

This way of thinking, or rather of doubting, he had contracted from the ſame reaſons which Claudian aſſigns, and which had induced Brutus, in his latter days, to doubt the exiſtence of that virtue which he had all his life cultivated. In ſhort, poor Booth imagined, that a larger ſhare of misfortunes had fallen to his lot than he had merited; and this led him, who (though a good claſſical ſcholar) was not deeply learned in religious matters, into a diſadvantageous opinion of Providence. A dangerous way of reaſoning, in which our concluſions are not only too haſty, from an imperfect view of things; but we are likewiſe liable to much error from partiality to ourſelves; viewing our virtues and vices as through a perſpective, in which we turn the glaſs always to our own advantage, ſo as to diminiſh the one, and as greatly to magnify the other.

From the above reaſons, it can be no wonder that Mr. Booth did not decline the acquaintance of this perſon, in a place which could not promiſe to afford him any better. He anſwered him, therefore, with great courteſy, as indeed he was of a very good and gentle

gentle disposition; and, after expressing a civil surprize at meeting him there, declared himself to be of the same opinion with regard to the necessity of human actions; adding, however, that he did not believe men were under any blind impulse or direction of Fate; but that every man acted merely from the force of that passion which was uppermost in his mind, and could do no otherwise.

A discourse now ensued between the two gentlemen on the necessity arising from the impulse of Fate, and the necessity arising from the impulse of Passion; which, as it will make a pretty pamphlet of itself, we shall reserve for some future opportunity. When this was ended, they set forward to survey the gaol, and the prisoners; with the several cases of whom Mr. Robinson, having been some time under confinement, undertook to make Mr. Booth acquainted.

CHAP. IV.

Disclosing farther Secrets of the Prison-House.

THE first persons whom they passed by were three men in fetters, who were enjoying themselves very merrily over a bottle of wine and a pipe of tobacco. These, Mr. Robinson informed his friend, were three street-robbers, and were all certain of being hanged at the ensuing sessions. 'So inconsiderable 'an object,' said he, 'is misery to light minds, when 'it is at any distance.'

A little farther they beheld a man prostrate on the ground, whose heavy groans, and frantic actions, plainly indicated the highest disorder of mind. This person was, it seems, committed for a small felony; and his wife, who then lay in, upon hearing the news, had thrown herself from a window two pair of stairs high, by which means he had, in all probability, lost both her and his child.

A very pretty girl then advanced towards them, whose beauty Mr. Booth could not help admiring the moment he saw her; declaring at the same time, he thought she had great innocence in her countenance.

Robinson

Robinſon ſaid ſhe was committed thither as an idle and diſorderly perſon, and a common ſtreet-walker. As ſhe paſſed by Mr. Booth, ſhe damned his eyes, and diſcharged a volley of words, every one of which was too indecent to be repeated.

They now beheld a little creature ſitting by herſelf in a corner, and crying bitterly. This girl, Mr. Robinſon ſaid, was committed, becauſe her father-in-law, who was in the grenadier-guards, had ſworn that he was afraid of his life, or of ſome bodily harm which ſhe would do him, and ſhe could get no ſureties for keeping the peace: for which reaſon Juſtice Thraſher had committed her to priſon.

A great noiſe now aroſe, occaſioned by the priſoners all flocking to ſee a fellow whipped for petty larceny, to which he was condemned by the court of quarter ſeſſions: but this ſoon ended in the diſappointment of the ſpectators; for the fellow, after being ſtripped, having advanced another ſixpence, was diſcharged untouched.

This was immediately followed by another buſtle. Blear-eyed Moll, and ſeveral of her companions, having got poſſeſſion of a man who was committed for certain odious, unmanlike practices, not fit to be named, were giving him various kinds of diſcipline, and would probably have put an end to him, had he not been reſcued out of their hands by authority.

When this buſtle was a little allayed, Mr. Booth took notice of a young woman in rags ſitting on the ground, and ſupporting the head of an old man in her lap, who appeared to be giving up the ghoſt. Theſe, Mr. Robinſon informed him, were father and daughter; that the latter was committed for ſtealing a loaf, in order to ſupport the former; and the former for receiving it, knowing it to be ſtolen.

A well-dreſſed man then walked ſurlily by them, whom Mr. Robinſon reported to have been committed on an indictment found againſt him for a moſt horrid perjury. 'But,' ſays he, 'we expect him to be

'bailed

'bailed to-day.'---'Good Heaven!' cries Booth 'can ſuch villains find bail, and is no perſon charitable enough to bail that poor father and daughter?' ---'O Sir!' anſwered Robinſon, 'the offence of the daughter being felony, is held not to be bailable in law; whereas perjury is a miſdemeanour only; and therefore, perſons who are even indicted for it, are nevertheleſs capable of being bailed. Nay, of all perjuries, that of which this man is indicted is the worſt; for it was with an intention of taking away the life of an innocent perſon by form of law. As to perjuries in civil matters, they are not ſo very criminal.'---'They are not,' ſaid Booth; 'and yet even theſe are a moſt flagitious offence, and worthy the higheſt puniſhment.'---'Surely they ought to be diſtinguiſhed,' anſwered Robinſon, 'from the others: for what is taking away a little property from a man, compared to taking away his life and his reputation, and ruining his family into the bargain? I hope there can be no compariſon in the crimes, and I think there ought to be none in the puniſhment. However, at preſent, the puniſhment of all perjury is only pillory, and tranſportation for ſeven years; and, as it is a traverſable and bailable offence, methods are often found to eſcape any puniſhment at all*."

Booth expreſſed great aſtoniſhment at this, when his attention was ſuddenly diverted by the moſt miſerable object that he had yet ſeen. This was a wretch almoſt naked, and who bore in his countenance, joined to an appearance of honeſty, the marks of poverty, hunger, and diſeaſe. He had, moreover, a wooden leg, and two or three ſcars on his forehead. 'The caſe of this poor man is, indeed, unhappy

* By removing the indictment by certiorari into the King's Bench, the trial is ſo long poſtponed, and the coſts are ſo highly increaſed, that proſecutors are often tired out, and ſome incapacitated from purſuing. *Verbum ſapient.*

'enough,'

'enough,' ſaid Robinſon: 'he hath ſerved his country, loſt his limb, and received ſeveral wounds at the ſiege of Gibraltar. When he was diſcharged from the hoſpital abroad, he came over to get into that of Chelſea, but could not immediately, as none of his officers were then in England. In the mean time he was one day apprehended and committed hither on ſuſpicion of ſtealing three herrings from a fiſhmonger. He was tried ſeveral months ago for this offence, and acquitted: indeed his innocence manifeſtly appeared at the trial; but he was brought back again for his fees, and here he hath lain ever ſince.'

Booth expreſſed great horror at this account, and declared, if he had only ſo much money in his pocket, he would pay his fees for him; but added, that he was not poſſeſſed of a ſingle farthing in the world.

Robinſon heſitated a moment, and then ſaid with a ſmile---'I am going to make you, Sir, a very odd propoſal after your laſt declaration; but what ſay you to a game at cards? it will ſerve to paſs a tedious hour, and may divert your thoughts from more unpleaſant ſpeculations.'

I do not imagine Booth would have agreed to this: for though ſome love of gaming had been formerly amongſt his faults, yet he was not ſo egregiouſly addicted to that vice, as to be tempted by the ſhabby plight of Robinſon, who had, if I may ſo expreſs myſelf, no charms for a gameſter. If he had, however, any ſuch inclinations, he had no opportunity to follow them; for, before he could make any anſwer to Robinſon's propoſal, a ſtrapping wench came up to Booth, and taking hold of his arm, aſked him to walk aſide with her, ſaying---'What a pox! are you ſuch a freſh cull, that you do not know this fellow? Why, he is a gambler, and committed for cheating at play. There is not ſuch a pick-pocket in the whole *quad**.

* A cant word for a priſon.

A ſcene

A ſcene of altercation now enſued between Robinſon and the lady, which ended in a bout at fiſtcuffs, in which the lady was greatly ſuperior to the philoſopher.

While the two combatants were engaged, a grave-looking man, rather better dreſſed than the majority of the company, came up to Mr. Booth, and taking him aſide, ſaid---'I am ſorry, Sir, to ſee a gentleman, 'as you appear to be, in ſuch intimacy with that 'raſcal, who makes no ſcruple of diſowning all re-'vealed religion. As for crimes, they are human 'errors, and ſignify but little; nay, perhaps, the 'worſe a man is by nature, the more room there is 'for grace. The Spirit is active, and loves beſt to 'inhabit thoſe minds where it may meet with the 'moſt work. Whatever your crime be, therefore, 'I would not have you deſpair, but rather rejoice at 'it; for, perhaps, it may be the means of your being 'called.' He ran on for a conſiderable time with this cant, without waiting for an anſwer, and ended in declaring himſelf a methodiſt.

Juſt as the methodiſt had finiſhed his diſcourſe, a beautiful young woman was uſhered into the gaol. She was genteel and well-dreſſed, and did not in the leaſt reſemble thoſe females whom Mr. Booth had hitherto ſeen. The conſtable had no ſooner delivered her at the gate, than ſhe aſked, with a commanding voice, for the keeper; and, when he arrived, ſhe ſaid to him---'Well, Sir, whither am I to be conducted? 'I hope I am not to take up my lodging with theſe 'creatures!' The keeper anſwered, with a kind of 'ſurly reſpect---'Madam, we have rooms for thoſe 'that can afford to pay for them.' At theſe words ſhe took a handſome purſe from her pocket, in which many guineas chinked, ſaying, with an air of indignation, that ſhe was not come thither on account of poverty. The keeper no ſooner viewed the purſe, than his features became all ſoftened in an inſtant; and, with all the courteſy of which he was maſter, deſired

desired the lady to walk with him, assuring her that she should have the best apartment in his house.

Mr. Booth was now left alone; for the methodist had forsaken him, having, as the phrase of the sect is, *searched* him to the bottom. In fact, he had thoroughly examined every one of Mr. Booth's pockets; from which he had conveyed away a penknife, and an iron snuff-box, these being all the moveables which were to be found.

Booth was standing near the gate of the prison, when the young lady above-mentioned was introduced into the yard. He viewed her features very attentively, and was persuaded that he knew her. She was, indeed, so remarkably handsome, that it was hardly possible for any one who had ever seen her to forget her. He enquired of one of the under-keepers, if the name of the prisoner lately arrived was not Matthews; to which he was answered, that her name was not Matthews, but Vincent, and that she was committed for murder.

The latter part of this information made Mr. Booth suspect his memory more than the former: for it was very possible that she might have changed her name; but yet he hardly thought she could have so far changed her nature, as to be guilty of a crime so very incongruous with her former gentle manners; for Miss Matthews had both the birth and education of a gentlewoman. He concluded, therefore, that he was certainly mistaken, and rested satisfied without any farther enquiry.

CHAP. V.

Containing certain Adventures which befel Mr. Booth in the Prison.

THE remainder of the day Mr. Booth spent in a melancholy contemplation on his present condition. He was destitute of the common necessaries of life, and consequently unable to subsist where he was; nor was there a single person in town to whom he could, with any reasonable hope, apply for his delivery.

livery. Grief for ſome time baniſhed the thoughts of food from his mind; but in the morning, Nature began to grow uneaſy for want of her uſual nouriſhment; for he had not eat a morſel during the laſt forty hours. A penny loaf, which is, it ſeems, the ordinary allowance to the priſoners in Bridewell, was now delivered him; and, while he was eating this, a man brought him a little packet ſealed up, informing him that it came by a meſſenger who ſaid it required no anſwer.

Mr. Booth now opened his packet; and, after unfolding ſeveral pieces of blank paper ſucceſſively, at laſt diſcovered a guinea, wrapped with great care in the innermoſt paper. He was vaſtly ſurpriſed at this ſight, as he had few, if any friends, from whom he could expect ſuch a favour, ſlight as it was; and not one of his friends, as he was apprized, knew of his confinement. As there was no direction to the packet, nor a word of writing contained in it, he began to ſuſpect that it was delivered to the wrong perſon; and being one of the moſt untainted honeſty, he found out the man who gave it to him, and again examined him concerning the perſon who brought it, and the meſſage delivered with it. The man aſſured Booth, that he had made no miſtake, ſaying---'If your name is 'Booth, Sir, I am poſitive you are the gentleman to 'whom the parcel I gave you belongs.'

The moſt ſcrupulous honeſty would, perhaps, in ſuch a ſituation, have been well enough ſatisfied in finding no owner for the guinea; eſpecially when proclamations had been made in the priſon, that Mr. Booth had received a packet without any direction, to which, if any perſon had any claim, and would diſcover the contents, he was ready to deliver it up to ſuch claimant. No ſuch claimant being found, (I mean, none who knew the contents; for many ſwore that they expected juſt ſuch a packet, and believed it to be their property) Mr. Booth very calmly reſolved to apply the money to his own uſe.

The

The firſt thing, after redemption of the coat, which Mr. Booth, hungry as he was, thought of, was to ſupply himſelf with ſnuff, which he had long, to his great ſorrow, been without. On this occaſion, he preſently miſſed that iron box which the methodiſt had ſo dexterouſly conveyed out of his pocket, as we mentioned in the laſt chapter.

He no ſooner miſſed this box, than he immediately ſuſpected that the gambler was the perſon who had ſtolen it; nay, ſo well was he aſſured of this man's guilt, that it may, perhaps, be improper to ſay he barely ſuſpected it. Though Mr. Booth was, as we have hinted, a man of a very ſweet diſpoſition, yet was he rather over-warm. Having, therefore, no doubt concerning the perſon of the thief, he eagerly ſought him out, and very bluntly charged him with the fact.

The gambler, whom I think we ſhould now call the philoſopher, received this charge without the leaſt viſible emotion, either of mind or muſcle. After a ſhort pauſe of a few moments, he anſwered, with great ſolemnity, as follows---'Young man, I am 'entirely unconcerned at your groundleſs ſuſpicion. 'He that cenſures a ſtranger, as I am to you, with- 'out any cauſe, makes a worſe compliment to him- 'ſelf than to the ſtranger. You know yourſelf, 'friend; you know not me. It is true, indeed, you 'heard me accuſed of being a cheat and a gameſter; 'but who is my accuſer? Look at my apparel, friend; 'do thieves and gameſters wear ſuch clothes as theſe? 'Play is my folly, not my vice; it is my impulſe, and 'I have been a martyr to it. Would a gameſter have 'aſked another to play, when he could have loſt 'eighteen-pence, and won nothing? However, if you 'are not ſatisfied, you may ſearch my pockets: the 'outſide of all but one will ſerve your turn, and in 'that one there is the eighteen-pence I told you of.' He then turned up his cloaths, and his pocket entirely reſembled the pitchers of the Belides.

Booth was a little ſtaggered at his defence. He ſaid, the real value of the iron box was too inconſiderable to mention; but that he had a capricious value for it, for the ſake of the perſon who gave it him: 'For though it is not,' ſaid he, 'worth ſix-pence, I 'would willingly give a crown to any one who would bring it me again.' Robinſon anſwered---'If that be 'the caſe, you have nothing more to do but to ſignify 'your intention in the priſon, and I am well convin-'ced you will not be long without regaining the poſ-'ſeſſion of your ſnuff-box.'

This advice was immediately followed, and with ſucceſs: the methodiſt preſently produced the box; which, he ſaid, he had found, and ſhould have returned before, had he known the perſon to whom it belonged; adding, with uplifted eyes, that the Spirit would not ſuffer him knowingly to detain the goods of another, however inconſiderable the value was. 'Why ſo, friend;' ſaid Robinſon: 'have I not heard 'you often ſay, the more wicked any man was, the bet-'ter; provided he was what you call a believer?'--- 'You miſtake me,' cries Cooper, (for that was the name of the methodiſt;) 'no man can be wicked after 'he is poſſeſſed by the Spirit. 'There is a wide dif-'ference between the days of ſin, and the days of 'grace. I have been a ſinner myſelf.'---'I believe 'thee,' cries Robinſon, with a ſneer. 'I care not,' anſwered the other, 'what an atheiſt believes. I 'ſuppoſe you would inſinuate, that I ſtole the ſnuff-'box; but I value not your malice: the Lord knows 'my innocence.' He then walked off with the reward; and Booth, turning to Robinſon, very earneſtly aſked pardon for his groundleſs ſuſpicion; which the other, without any heſitatation, accorded him, ſaying,--- 'You never accuſed me, Sir; you ſuſpected ſome 'gambler, with whoſe character I have no concern. 'I ſhould be angry with a friend or acquaintance who 'ſhould give a haſty credit to any allegation againſt 'me; but I have no reaſon to be offended with you

'for

'for believing what the woman, and the rascal who is 'just gone, and who is committed here for a pick-'pocket, which you did not perhaps know, told you 'to my disadvantage. And if you thought me to be 'a gambler, you had just reason to suspect any ill of 'me: for I myself am confined here by the perjury of 'one of those villains; who, having cheated me of my 'money at play, and hearing that I intended to apply 'to a magistrate against him, himself began the at-'tack, and obtained a warrant against me of Justice 'Thrasher, who, without hearing one speech in my 'defence, committed me to this place.'

Booth testified great compassion at this account; and having invited Robinson to dinner, they spent that day together. In the afternoon Booth indulged his friend with a game at cards; at first for halfpence and afterwards for shillings; when Fortune so favoured Robinson, that he did not leave the other a single shilling in his pocket.

A surprising run of luck in a gamester is often mistaken for somewhat else, by persons who are not over zealous believers in the divinity of Fortune. I have known a stranger at Bath, who had happened fortunately (I might almost say unfortunately) to have four by honours in his hand almost every time he dealt, for a whole evening, shunned universally by the whole company the next day. And certain it is, that Mr. Booth, though of a temper very little inclined to suspicion, began to waver in his opinion, whether the character given by Mr. Robinson of himself, or that which the others gave of him, was the truer.

In the morning, hunger paid him a second visit, and found him again in the same situation as before. After some deliberation, therefore, he resolved to ask Robinson to lend him a shilling or two of that money which was lately his own. And this experiment he thought, would confirm him either in a good or evil opinion of that gentleman. To this demand Robinson answered, with great alacrity, that he should very

gladly have complied, had not Fortune played one of her jade tricks with him: 'For ſince my winning of 'you,' ſaid he, 'I have been ſtripped not only of your 'money, but my own.' He was going to harangue farther, but Booth, with great indignation, turned from him.

This poor gentleman had very little time to reflect on his own miſery, or the raſcality, as it appeared to him, of the other, when the ſame perſon, who had the day before delivered him the guinea from the unknown hand, again accoſted him, and told him a lady in the houſe (ſo he expreſſed himſelf) deſired the favour of his company.

Mr. Booth immediately obeyed the meſſage, and was conducted into a room in the priſon, where he was preſently convinced that Mrs. Vincent was no other than his old acquaintance Miſs Mathews.

CHAP. VI.

Containing the extraordinary Behaviour of Miſs Matthews on her meeting with Booth, and ſome Endeavours to prove by Reaſon and Authority, that it is poſſible for a Woman to appear to be what ſhe really is not.

EIGHT or nine years had paſſed ſince any interview between Mr. Booth and Miſs Matthews; and their meeting now in ſo extraordinary a place affected both of them with an equal ſurprize.

After ſome immaterial ceremonies, the lady acquainted Mr. Booth, that having heard there was a perſon in the priſon who knew her by the name of Matthews, ſhe had a great curioſity to enquire who he was; whereupon he had been ſhewn to her from the window of the houſe; that ſhe immediately recollected him, and being informed of his diſtreſsful ſituation, for which ſhe expreſſed great concern, ſhe had ſent him that guinea which he had received the day before; and then proceeded to excuſe herſelf for not having deſired to ſee him at that time, when ſhe was under the greateſt diſorder and hurry of ſpirits.

Booth made many handſome acknowledgments of

her favour: and added, that he very little wondered at the disorder of her spirits; concluding, that he was heartily concerned at seeing her there. 'But I hope, Madam,' said he------

Here he hesitated; upon which, bursting into an agony of tears, she cried out---'O captain, captain! 'many extraordinary things have passed since I last 'saw you! O, gracious Heaven! did I ever expect 'that this would be the next place of our meeting!'

She then flung herself into her chair, where she gave a loose to her passion; whilst he in the most affectionate and tender manner, endeavoured to soothe and comfort her; but passion itself did, probably, more for it's own relief, than all his friendly consolations. Having vented this in a large flood of tears, she became pretty well composed; but Booth unhappily mentioning her father, she again relapsed into an agony, and cried---'Why, why will you repeat the name of that 'dear man! I have disgraced him, Mr. Booth! I am 'unworthy the name of his daughter!' Here passion again stopped her words, and discharged itself in tears.

After this second vent of sorrow or shame; or if the reader pleases, of rage; she once more recovered from her agonies. To say the truth, these are, I believe, as critical discharges of nature, as any of those which are so called by the physicians; and do more effectually relieve the mind than any remedies with which the whole *materia medica* of philosophy can supply it.

When Mrs. Vincent had recovered her faculties, she perceived Booth standing silent, with a mixture of concern and astonishment in his countenance; then addressing herself to him with an air of the most bewitching softness, of which she was perfect mistress, she said---'I do not wonder at your amazement, Cap'tain Booth; nor, indeed, at the concern which you 'so plainly discover for me, for I well know the good'ness of your nature: but, O Mr. Booth! believe me, 'when you know what hath happened since our last 'meeting, your concern will be raised, however your

‘ aſtoniſhment may ceaſe. O, Sir! you are a ſtranger ‘ to the cauſe of my ſorrows.’

‘ I hope I am, Madam,’ anſwered he; ‘ for I ‘ cannot believe what I have heard in the priſon: ſure- ‘ ly, murder---’ At which words ſhe ſtarted from her chair, repeating---‘ Murder! O, it is muſic in my ‘ ears! You have heard then the cauſe of my com- ‘ mitment, my glory, my delight, my reparation! ‘ Yes, my old friend, this is the hand, this is the arm ‘ that drove the penknife to his heart. Unkind For- ‘ tune, that not one drop of his blood reached my ‘ hand! indeed, Sir, I would never have waſhed it ‘ from it. But though I have not the happineſs to ſee ‘ it on my hand, I have the glorious ſatisfaction of re- ‘ membering I ſaw it run in rivers on the floor; I ſaw ‘ it forſake his cheeks; I ſaw him fall a martyr to my ‘ revenge. And is the killing a villain to be called ‘ murder? Perhaps the law calls it ſo. Let it call it ‘ what it will, or puniſh me as it pleaſes. Puniſh me! ‘ ---no, no---that is not in the power of man---not of ‘ that monſter, man, Mr. Booth. I am undone, am ‘ revenged, and have now no more buſineſs for life: ‘ let them take it from me when they will.’

Our poor gentleman turned pale with horror at this ſpeech, and the ejaculation of---‘ Good Heavens, ‘ what do I hear!’ burſt ſpontaneouſly from his lips: nor can we wonder at this, though he was the braveſt of men; for her voice, her looks, her geſtures, were properly adapted to the ſentiments ſhe expreſſed. Such, indeed, was her image, that neither could Shakeſpeare deſcribe, nor Hogarth paint, nor Clive act, a Fury, in higher perfection.

‘ What do you hear!’ reiterated ſhe. ‘ You hear ‘ the reſentment of the moſt injured of women. You ‘ have heard, you ſay, of the murder; but do you ‘ know the cauſe, Mr. Booth? Have you, ſince ‘ your return to England, viſited that country where ‘ we formerly knew one another? Tell me, do you ‘ know my wretched ſtory? tell me that, my friend.’

Booth hesitated for an answer. Indeed, he had heard some imperfect stories, not much to her advantage. She waited not till he had formed a speech, but cried---'Whatever you may have heard, you cannot 'be acquainted with all the strange accidents which 'have occasioned your seeing me in a place which, 'at our last parting, was so unlikely that I should ever 'have been found in; nor can you know the cause of 'all that I have uttered, and which, I am convinced, 'you never expected to have heard from my mouth. If 'these circumstances raise your curiosity, I will satis- 'fy it.'

He answered, that curiosity was too mean a word to express his ardent desire of knowing her story. Upon which, with very little previous ceremony, she began to relate what is written in the following chapter.

But before we put an end to this, it may be necessary to whisper a word or two to the critics, who have, perhaps, begun to express no less astonishment than Mr. Booth, that a lady, in whom we had remarked a most extraordinary power of displaying softness, should, the very next moment after the words were out of her mouth, express sentiments becoming the lips of a Dalilah, Jezebel, Medea, Semiramis, Parysatis, Tanaquil, Livilla, Messalina, Agrippina, Brunichilde, Elfrida, Lady Macbeth, Joan of Naples, Christiana of Sweden, Katherine Hays, Sarah Malcolm, Con. Philips*, or any other heroine of the tender sex, which history, sacred or prophane, ancient or modern, false or true, hath recorded.

We desire such critics to remember, that it is the same English climate, in which, on the lovely 10th of June, under a serene sky, the amorous Jacobite kissing the odoriferous zephyr's breath, gathers a nosegay of white roses to deck the whiter breast of Celia; and in which, on the 11th of June, the very next day,

* Though last, not least.

the

the boisterous Boreas, rouzed by the hollow thunder, rushes horrible through the air, and driving the wet tempest before him, levels the hope of the husbandman with the earth; dreadful remembrance of the consequences of the Revolution!

Again, let it be remembered, that it is the self-same Celia, all tender, soft, and delicate; who with a voice, the sweetness of which the syrens might envy, warbles the harmonious song in praise of the Young Adventurer: and again, the next day, or perhaps the next hour, with fiery eyes, wrinkled brows, and foaming lips, roars forth treason and nonsense in a political argument with some fair-one of a different principle.

Or, if the critic be a whig, and consequently dislikes such kind of similies, as being too favourable to jacobitism, let him be contented with the following story---

I happened, in my youth, to sit behind two ladies, in a side-box at a play, where, in the balcony on the opposite side, was placed the inimitable B------y C------s, in company with a young fellow of no very formal, or indeed sober, appearance. One of the ladies, I remember, said to the other---'Did you ever 'see any thing look so modest and so innocent as that 'girl over the way? What a pity it is such a creature 'should be in the way of ruin, as I am afraid she is, 'by her being alone with that young fellow!' Now this lady was no bad physiognomist; for it was impossible to conceive a greater appearance of modesty, innocence, and simplicity, than what Nature had displayed in the countenance of that girl; and yet, all appearances notwithstanding, I myself (remember, critic, it was in my youth) had a few mornings before seen that very identical picture of all those engaging qualities, in bed with a rake at a bagnio, smoaking tobacco, drinking punch, talking obscenity, and swearing and cursing with all the impudence and impiety of the lowest and most abandoned trull of a soldier.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

In which Miss Matthews begins her History.

MISS Matthews having barred the door on the inside, as securely as it was before barred on the outside, proceeded as follows---

'You may imagine I am going to begin my history 'at the time when you left the country; but I cannot 'help reminding you of something which happened 'before. You will soon recollect the incident; but, 'I believe, you little knew the consequence, either at 'that time, or since. Alas! I could keep a secret 'then: now I have no secrets; the world knows all, 'and it is not worth my while to conceal any thing. 'Well! you will not wonder, I believe. I protest I 'can hardly tell it you, even now. But I am con-'vinced you have too good an opinion of yourself to 'be surprized at any conquest you have made. Few 'men want that good opinion, and perhaps very few 'had ever more reason for it. Indeed, Will, you was 'a charming fellow in those days; nay, you are not 'much altered for the worse now, at least in the opi-'nion of some women; for your complexion and fea-'tures are grown much more masculine than they were.' Here Booth made her a low bow, most probably with a compliment; and, after a little hesitation, she again proceeded---'Do you remember a contest which hap-'pened at an assembly betwixt myself and Miss John-'son, about standing uppermost? You was then my 'partner; and young Williams danced with the other 'lady. The particulars are not now worth mention-'ing, though I suppose you have long since forgot 'them. Let it suffice, that you supported my claim, 'and Williams very sneakingly gave up that of his 'partner, who was, with much difficulty, afterwards 'prevailed on to dance with him. You said, (I am 'sure I repeat the words exactly) that you would not, 'for the world, affront any lady there; but that you 'thought you might, without any such danger, de-'clare, that there was no assembly in which that lady,

'meaning

'meaning your humble servant, was not worthy of the 'uppermost place: "nor will I," said you, "suffer "the first duke in England, when she is at the upper-"most end of the room, and hath called her dance, to "lead his partner above her."

'What made this the more pleasing to me was, 'that I secretly hated Miss Johnson. Will you have 'the reason? Why then, I will tell you honestly, she 'was my rival: that word, perhaps, astonishes you, 'as you never, I believe, heard of any one who made 'his addresses to me; and, indeed, my heart was, till 'that night, entirely indifferent to all mankind. I 'mean, then, that she was my rival for praise, for 'beauty, for dress, for fortune, and consequently, 'for admiration. My triumph on this conquest is not 'to be expressed, any more than my delight in the 'person to whom I chiefly owed it. The former, I 'fancy, was visible to the whole company, and I de-'sired it should be so; but the latter was so well con-'cealed, that no one, I am confident, took any notice 'of it. And yet you appeared to me that night to 'be an angel. You looked, you danced, you spoke '---every thing charmed me.'

'Good Heavens!' cries Booth, 'is it possible 'you should do me so much unmerited honour, and I 'should be dunce enough not to perceive the least 'symptom?'

'I assure you,' answered she, 'I did all I could to 'prevent you; and yet I almost hated you for not see-'ing through what I strove to hide. Why, Mr. 'Booth, was you not more quick-sighted? I will 'answer for you; your affections were more happily 'disposed of to a much better woman than myself, 'whom you married soon afterwards. I should ask 'you for her, Mr. Booth; I should have asked you 'for her before: but I am unworthy of asking for her, 'or of calling her my acquaintance.'

Booth stopped her short, as she was running into another fit of passion, and begged her to omit all for-

mer

mer matters, and acquaint him with that part of her hiſtory to which he was an entire ſtranger.

She then renewed her diſcourſe as follows---'You 'know, Mr. Booth, I ſoon afterwards left that town, 'upon the death of my grandmother, and returned 'home to my father's houſe; where I had not been 'long arrived before ſome troops of dragoons came to 'quarter in our neighbourhood. Among the officers, 'there was a cornet, whoſe deteſted name was Hebbers '---a name I could ſcarce repeat, had I not at the 'ſame time the pleaſure to reflect that he is now no 'more. My father, you know, who was a hearty 'well-wiſher to the preſent government, uſed always 'to invite the officers to his houſe; ſo did he theſe. 'Nor was it long before this cornet, in ſo particular a 'manner recommended himſelf to the poor old gentle-'man, (I cannot think of him without tears!) that 'our houſe became his principal habitation; and he 'was rarely at his quarters, unleſs when his ſuperior 'officers obliged him to be there. I ſhall ſay nothing 'of his perſon, nor could that be any recommendation 'to a man: it was ſuch, however, as no woman could 'have made an objection to. Nature had certainly 'wrapt up her odious work in a moſt beautiful cover-'ing. To ſay the truth, he was the handſomeſt man, 'except one only, that I ever ſaw---I aſſure you, I 'have ſeen a handſomer---but---well. He had, be-'ſides, all the qualifications of a gentleman; was 'genteel, and extremely polite; ſpoke French well, 'and danced to a miracle; but what chiefly recom-'mended him to my father, was his ſkill in muſick, 'of which you know that dear man was the moſt vio-'lent lover. I wiſh he was not too ſuſceptible of flat-'tery on that head; for I have heard Hebbers often 'greatly commend my father's performance, and have 'obſerved, that the good man was wonderfully pleaſed 'with ſuch commendations. To ſay the truth, it is 'the only way I can account for the extraordinary

friend-

'friendship which my father conceived for this person; 'such a friendship, that he at last became a part of our 'family.

'This very circumstance, which, as I am convinced, 'strongly recommended him to my father, had the very 'contrary effect with me: I had never any delight in 'musick; and it was not without much difficulty I 'was prevailed on to learn to play on the harpsichord, 'in which I had made a very slender progress. As 'this man, therefore, was frequently the occasion of 'my being importuned to play against my will, I began 'to entertain some dislike for him on that account; 'and, as to his person, I assure you, I long continued 'to look on it with great indifference.'

'How strange will the art of this man appear to you 'presently, who had sufficient address to convert that 'very circumstance which had at first occasioned my 'dislike, into the first seeds of affection for him!

'You have often, I believe, heard my sister Betty 'play on the harpsichord: she was, indeed, reputed 'the best performer in the whole country.

'I was the farthest in the world from regarding this 'perfection of her's with envy. In reality, perhaps, 'I despised all perfection of this kind; at least, as I 'had neither skill nor ambition to excel this way, I 'looked upon it as a matter of mere indifference.

'Hebbers first put this emulation in my head. He 'took great pains to persuade me, that I had much 'greater abilities of the musical kind than my sister; 'and that I might with the greatest ease, if I pleased, 'excel her: offering me, at the same time, his assis'tance, if I would resolve to undertake it.

'When he had sufficiently inflamed my ambition, 'in which, perhaps, he found too little difficulty, the 'continual praises of my sister, which before I had 'disregarded, became more and more nauseous in my 'ears; and the rather, as music being the favourite 'passion of my father, I became apprehensive (not

without

'without frequent hints from Hebbers of that nature) 'that ſhe might gain too great a preference in his fa- 'vour.

'To my harpſichord then I applied myſelf night and 'day, with ſuch induſtry and attention, that I ſoon 'began to perform in a tolerable manner. I do not ab- 'ſolutely ſay I excelled my ſiſter, for many were of a 'different opinion; but, indeed, there might be ſome 'partiality in all that.

'Hebbers, at leaſt, declared himſelf on my ſide, 'and nobody could doubt his judgment. He aſſerted 'openly, that I played in the better manner of the 'two: and one day, when I was playing to him alone, 'he affected to burſt into a rapture of admiration; and 'ſqueezing me gently by the hand, ſaid---" There, "Madam! I now declare you excel your ſiſter as much "in muſick as," added he, in a whiſpering ſigh, "you "do her, and all the world, in every other charm."

'No woman can bear any ſuperiority in whatever 't[illegible]g ſhe deſires to excel in. I now began to hate all 'the admirers of my ſiſter, to be uneaſy at every com- 'mendation beſtowed on her ſkill in muſick, and conſe- 'quently to love Hebbers for the preference which he 'gave to mine.

'It was now that I began to ſurvey the handſome 'perſon of Hebbers with pleaſure. And here, Mr. 'Booth, I will betray to you the grand ſecret of our ſex. 'Many women, I believe, do, with great innocence, 'and even with great indifference, converſe with men of 'the fineſt perſons: but this I am confident may be 'affirmed with truth, that when once a woman comes 'to aſk this queſtion of herſelf---" Is the man whom I "like for ſome other reaſon, handſome?" her fate, and 'his too, very ſtrongly depend on her anſwering in the 'affirmative.

'Hebbers no ſooner perceived that he made an im- 'preſſion on my heart; of which, I am ſatisfied, I gave 'him too undeniable tokens; than he affected, on a 'ſudden, to ſhun me in the moſt apparent manner. He

'wore the most melancholy air in my presence; and by 'his dejected looks and sighs, firmly persuaded me, that 'there was some secret sorrow labouring in his bosom; 'nor will it be difficult to imagine to what cause I im-'puted it.

'Whilst I was wishing for his declaration of a pas-'sion, in which, I thought, I could not be mistaken, 'and, at the same time, trembling, whenever we met, 'with the apprehensions of this very declaration, the 'widow Carey came from London to make us a visit, 'intending to stay the whole summer at our house.

'Those who know Mrs. Carey will scarce think 'I do her an injury, in saying she is far from being 'handsome; and yet she is as finished a coquette as if 'she had the highest beauty to support that character. 'But, perhaps, you have seen her; and, if you have, 'I am convinced you will readily subscribe to my 'opinion.'

Booth answered, he had not; and then she proceeded as in the following chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

The History of Miss Matthews continued.

'THIS young lady had not been three days with us 'before Hebbers grew so particular with her, that 'it was generally observed; and my poor father, who, 'I believe, loved the cornet as if he had been his son, 'began to jest on the occasion, as one who would not 'be displeased at throwing a good jointure into the arms 'of his friend.

'You will easily guess, Sir, the disposition of my 'mind on this occasion: but I was not permitted to 'suffer long under it; for one day when Hebbers was 'alone with me, he took an opportunity of expressing 'his abhorrence at the thoughts of marrying for inte-'rest, contrary to his inclinations. I was warm on 'the subject; and, I believe, went so far as to say, that 'none but fools and villains did so. He replied, with a 'sigh, "Yes, Madam; but what would you think of "a man whose heart is all the while bleeding for ano-

"ther

“ ther woman, to whom he would willingly ſacrifice “ the world; but becauſe he muſt ſacrifice her intereſt “ as well as his own, never durſt even give her a hint “ of that paſſion which was preying on his very vitals? “ Do you believe, Miſs Fanny, there is ſuch a wretch “ on earth?” I anſwered with an aſſumed coldneſs, ‘ I did not believe there was. He then took me gently ‘ by the hand, and with a look ſo tender, that I cannot ‘ deſcribe it, vowed he was himſelf that wretch. Then ‘ ſtarting, as if conſcious of an error committed, he ‘ cried with a faultering voice---“ What am I ſaying? “ Pardon me, Miſs Fanny; ſince I beg only your pity, “ I will never aſk for more.” At theſe words, hearing ‘ my father coming up, I betrayed myſelf entirely; if, ‘ indeed, I had not done it before. I haſtily withdrew ‘ my hand, crying---“ Huſh, for Heaven's ſake; my “ father is juſt coming in!” my bluſhes, my look, and ‘ my accent, telling him, I ſuppoſe, all he wiſhed to ‘ know.

‘ A few days now brought matters to an eclairciſſe- ‘ ment between us; the being undeceived in what had ‘ given me ſo much uneaſineſs, gave me a pleaſure too ‘ ſweet to be reſiſted. To triumph over the widow, for ‘ whom I had, in a very ſhort time, contracted a moſt ‘ inveterate hatred, was a pride not to be deſcribed. ‘ Hebbers appeared to me to be the cauſe of all this ‘ happineſs. I doubted not but that he had the moſt ‘ diſintereſted paſſion for me, and thought him every ‘ way worthy of it's return. I did return it, and ac- ‘ cepted him as my lover.

‘ He declared the greateſt apprehenſions of my father's ‘ ſuſpicion, though I am convinced theſe were cauſeleſs, ‘ had his deſigns been honourable. To blind theſe, I ‘ conſented that he ſhould carry on ſham addreſſes to the ‘ widow, who was now a conſtant jeſt between us: and ‘ he pretended, from time to time, to acquaint me faith- ‘ fully with every thing that paſſed at his interviews ‘ with her; nor was this faithleſs woman wanting in ‘ her part of the deceit. She carried herſelf to me all

 ‘ the

'the while with a ſhew of affection, and pretended to 'have the utmoſt friendſhip for me. But ſuch are the 'friendſhips of women!'

At this remark, Booth, though enough affected at ſome parts of the ſtory, had great difficulty to refrain from laughter; but, by good luck, he eſcaped being perceived; and the lady went on without interruption.

'I am now come to a part of my narrative in which 'it is impoſſible to be particular without being tedious; 'for, as to the commerce between lovers, it is, I believe, 'much the ſame in all caſes; and there is, perhaps, 'ſcarce a ſingle phraſe that hath not been repeated ten 'millions of times.

'One thing, however, as I ſtrongly remarked it then, 'ſo I will repeat it to you now. In all our converſa'tions, in moments when he fell into the warmeſt rap'tures, and expreſſed the greateſt uneaſineſs at the delay 'of his joys, he ſeldom mentioned the word *marriage*; 'and never once ſolicited a day for that purpoſe. In'deed, women cannot be cautioned too much againſt 'ſuch lovers; for though I have heard, and perhaps 'truly, of ſome of our ſex of a virtue ſo exalted, that 'it is proof againſt every temptation; yet the generality, 'I am afraid, are too much in the power of a man to 'whom they have owned an affection. What is called 'being upon a good footing is, perhaps, being upon 'a very dangerous one; and a woman who hath given 'her conſent to marry can hardly be ſaid to be ſafe till 'ſhe is married.

'And now, Sir, I haſten to the period of my ruin. 'We had a wedding in our family; my muſical ſiſter 'was married to a young fellow as muſical as herſelf. 'Such a match, you may be ſure, amongſt other feſ'tivities, muſt have a ball. Oh, Mr. Booth! ſhall 'modeſty forbid me to remark to you what paſſed on 'that occaſion? But why do I mention modeſty, who 'have no pretenſions to it? Every thing was ſaid, and 'practiſed, on that occaſion, as if the purpoſe had been 'to inflame the mind of every woman preſent. That

'effect,

'effect, I freely own to you, it had with me. Music, 'dancing, wine, and the most luscious conversation, in 'which my poor dear father innocently joined, raised 'ideas in me of which I shall for ever repent; and I 'wished (why should I deny it) that it had been my 'wedding, instead of my sister's.

'The villain Hebbers danced with me that night, 'and lost no opportunity of improving the occasion. In 'short, the dreadful evening came. My father, though 'it was a very unusual thing with him, grew intoxica-'ted with liquor; most of the men were in the same 'condition; nay, I myself drank more than I was 'accustomed to, enough to enflame, though not to dis-'order. I lost my former bed-fellow, my sister, and--- 'you may, I think, guess the rest---the villain found 'means to steal to my chamber, and I was undone.

'Two months I passed in this detested commerce, 'buying, even then, my guilty, half-tasted pleasures, 'at too dear a rate, with continual horror and appre-'hension; but what have I paid since! what do I 'pay now, Mr. Booth! O may my fate be a warning 'to every woman to keep her innocence, to resist every 'temptation, since she is certain to repent of the foolish 'bargain! May it be a warning to her to deal with 'mankind with care and caution; to shun the least ap-'proaches of dishonour, and never to confide too much 'in the honesty of a man, nor in her own strength, 'where she has so much at stake! let her remember she 'walks on a precipice, and the bottomless pit is to 'receive her, if she slips; nay, if she makes but one 'false step!

'I ask your pardon, Mr. Booth; I might have 'spared these exhortations, since no woman hears me; 'but you will not wonder at seeing me affected on this 'occasion.'

Booth declared he was much more surprized at her being able so well to preserve her temper in recounting her story.

'O Sir!' answered she, 'I am at length reconciled to my

'my fate; and I can now die with pleasure, since I die 'revenged. I am not one of those mean wretches, who 'can sit down and lament their misfortunes. If I ever 'shed tears, they are the tears of indignation---but I 'will proceed.

'It was my fate now to solicit marriage; and I 'failed not to do it in the most earnest manner. He an-'swered me at first with procrastinations; declaring, 'from time to time, he would mention it to my father, 'and still excusing himself for not doing it. At last he 'thought on an expedient to obtain a longer reprieve. 'This was, by pretending that he should, in a very 'few weeks, be preferred to the command of a troop; 'and then, he said, he could with some confidence pro-'pose the match.

'In this delay, I was persuaded to acquiesce; and 'was, indeed, pretty easy; for I had not yet the least 'mistrust of his honour: but what words can paint my 'sensations! when one morning he came into my room, 'with all the marks of dejection in his countenance, and 'throwing an open letter on the table, said---" There " is news, Madam, in that letter, which I am unable " to tell you; nor can it give you more concern than it " hath given me!"

'This letter was from his captain, to acquaint him 'that the route, as they call it, was arrived, and that 'they were to march within two days. And this, I am 'since convinced, was what he expected, instead of the 'preferment which had been made the pretence of de-'laying our marriage.

'The shock which I felt at reading this was inex-'pressible; occasioned, indeed, principally by the de-'parture of a villain whom I loved. However, I soon 'acquired sufficient presence of mind to remember the 'main point; and I now insisted peremptorily on his 'making me immediately his wife, whatever might be 'the consequence.

'He seemed thunderstruck at this proposal; being, I 'suppose, destitute of any excuse: but I was too impa-

'tient to wait for an anſwer, and cried out with much 'eagerneſs---" Sure you cannot heſitate a moment upon "this matter!"---" Heſitate, Madam," replied he: "what you aſk is impoſſible: is this a time for me to "mention a thing of this kind to your father?" My 'eyes were now opened all at once; I fell into a rage 'little ſhort of madneſs. " Tell not me," I cried, "of impoſſibilities, nor times, nor of my father! my "honour, my reputation, my all, are at ſtake! I will "have no excuſe, no delay! Make me your wife this "inſtant, or I will proclaim you over the face of the "whole earth for the greateſt of villains!" He an'ſwered, with a kind of ſneer---" What will you pro"claim, Madam? whoſe honour will you injure?" My 'tongue faultered when I offered to reply, and I fell 'into a violent agony, which ended in a fit; nor do I 'remember any thing more that paſſed, till I found 'myſelf in the arms of my poor affrighted father.

'O, Mr. Booth, what was then my ſituation! I 'tremble even now from the reflection. I muſt ſtop a 'moment. I can go no farther.' Booth attempted all in his power to ſoothe her; and ſhe ſoon recovered her powers, and proceeded in her ſtory.

CHAP. IX.

In which Miſs Matthews concludes her Relation.

'BEFORE I had recovered my ſenſes, I had ſuf'ficiently betrayed myſelf to the beſt of men; who, 'inſtead of upbraiding me, or exerting any anger, en'deavoured to comfort me all he could, with aſſurances "that all ſhould yet be well. This goodneſs of his 'affected me with inexpreſſible ſenſations: I proſtrated 'myſelf before him, embraced and kiſſed his knees, and 'almoſt diſſolved in tears, and a degree of tenderneſs 'hardly to be conceived. But I am running into too 'minute deſcriptions.

'Hebbers, ſeeing me in a fit, had left me, and ſent 'one of the ſervants to take care of me. He then ran 'away like a thief from the houſe, without taking his 'leave of my father, or once thanking him for all his

'civilities.

'civilities. He did not stop at his quarters, but made 'directly to London; apprehensive, I believe, either of 'my father or brother's resentment: for I am convinced 'he is a coward. Indeed, his fear of my brother was 'utterly groundless; for I believe he would rather have 'thanked any man who had destroyed me; and I am 'sure I am not in the least behind-hand with him in good 'wishes.

'All his inveteracy to me had, however, no effect on 'my father, at least at that time; for though the good 'man took sufficient occasions to reprimand me for my 'past offence, he could not be brought to abandon me. 'A treaty of marriage was now set on foot, in which 'my father himself offered me to Hebbers, with a for- 'tune superior to that which had been given with my 'sister; nor could all my brother's remonstrances 'against it, as an act of the highest injustice, avail.

'Hebbers entered into the treaty, though not with 'much warmth. He had even the assurance to make 'additional demands on my father, which being com- 'plied with, every thing was concluded, and the vil- 'lain once more received into the house. He soon 'found means to obtain my forgiveness of his former 'behaviour; indeed, he convinced me (so foolishly 'blind is female love) that he had never been to blame.

'When every thing was ready for our nuptials, and 'the day of the ceremony was to be appointed, in the 'midst of my happiness, I received a letter from an un- 'known hand, acquainting me (guess, Mr. Booth, 'how I was shocked at receiving it!) that Mr. Hebbers 'was already married to a woman in a distant part of 'the kingdom.

'I will not tire you with all that passed at our next 'interview. I communicated the letter to Hebbers; 'who, after some hesitation, owned the fact: and not 'only owned it, but had the address to improve it to 'his own advantage, to make it the means of satisfying 'me concerning all his former delays; which, to say, 'the truth, I was not so much displeased at imputing it

'to any degree of villainy, as I should have been to 'impute it to the want of a sufficient warmth of affec-'tion; and though the disappointment of all my hopes, 'at the very instant of their expected fruition, threw 'me into the most violent disorders; yet when I came 'a little to myself, he had no great difficulty to per-'suade me that in every instance, with regard to me, 'Hebbers had acted from no other motive than from the 'most ardent and ungovernable love. And there is, I 'believe, no crime which a woman will not forgive, 'when she can derive it from that fountain. In short, 'I forgave him all, and am willing to persuade myself 'I am not weaker than the rest of my sex. Indeed, 'Mr. Booth, he hath a bewitching tongue, and is 'master of an address that no woman could resist. I do 'assure you, the charms of his person are his least per-'fection, at least in my eye.'

Here Booth smiled, but happily without her perceiving it.

'A fresh difficulty (continued she) now arose. This 'was, to excuse the delay of the ceremony to my 'father, who every day very earnestly urged it. This 'made me so very uneasy, that I at last listened to a 'proposal, which if any one, in the days of my inno-'cence, or even a few days before, had assured me I 'could have submitted to have thought of, I should 'have treated the supposition with the highest contempt 'and indignation; nay, I scarce reflect on it with more 'horror than astonishment. In short, I agreed to run 'away with him; to leave my father, my reputation, 'every thing which was or ought to have been dear to 'me, and to live with this villain as a mistress, since I 'could not be his wife.

'Was not this an obligation of the highest and ten-'derest kind? and had I not reason to expect every return 'in the man's power on whom I had conferred it?

'I will make short of the remainder of my story: 'for what is there of a woman worth relating, after 'what I have told you!

'Above a year I lived with this man in an obscure 'court in London, during which time I had a child by 'him, whom Heaven, I thank it, hath been pleased to 'take to itself.

'During many months he behaved to me with all the 'apparent tenderness, and even fondness, imaginable; 'but, alas! how poor was my enjoyment of this, 'compared to what it would have been in another situ-'ation! When he was present, life was barely tolera-'ble; but when he was absent, nothing could equal 'the misery I endured. I passed my hours almost en-'tirely alone: for no company, but what I despised, 'would consort with me. Abroad I scarce ever went, 'lest I should meet any of my former acquaintance; 'for their sight would have plunged a thousand daggers 'in my soul. My only diversion was going, very 'seldom, to a play, where I hid myself in the gallery, 'with a daughter of the woman of the house---a girl, 'indeed, of good sense, and many good qualities: but 'how much beneath me was it to be the companion of a 'creature so low! O Heavens, when I have seen my 'equals glittering in a side-box, how have the thoughts 'of my lost honour torn my soul!'

'Pardon me, dear Madam,' cries Booth, 'for in-'terrupting you; but I am under the utmost anxiety to 'know what became of your poor father, for whom I 'have so great a respect, and who, I am convinced, 'must so bitterly feel your loss.'

'O Mr. Booth!' answered she, 'he was scarce ever 'out of my thoughts. His dear image still obtruded 'itself into my mind, and I believe would have broken 'my heart, had I not taken a very preposterous way to 'ease myself. I am, indeed, almost ashamed to tell 'you; but necessity put it in my head. You will 'think the matter too trifling to have been remembered, 'and so it surely was; nor should I have remembered it 'on any other occasion. You must know then, Sir, 'that my brother was always my inveterate enemy, 'and altogether as fond of my sister. He once prevailed

'with

'with my father to let him take my ſiſter with him in 'the chariot, and by that means I was diſappointed of 'going to a ball which I had ſet my heart on. The 'diſappointment, I aſſure you, was great at the time; 'but I had long ſince forgotten it. I muſt have been a 'very bad woman, if I had not; for it was the only 'thing in which I can remember that my father ever 'diſobliged me. However, I now revived this in my 'mind, which I artificially worked up into ſo high an 'injury, that I aſſure you it afforded me no little com-'fort. When any tender idea intruded into my boſom, 'I immediately raiſed this phantom of an injury in my 'imagination, and it conſiderably leſſened the fury of 'that ſorrow which I ſhould have otherwiſe felt for the 'loſs of ſo good a father, who died within two months 'of my departure from him.

'And now, Sir, to draw to a concluſion. One night, 'as I was in the gallery at Drury-lane playhouſe, I ſaw 'below me, in a ſide-box, (ſhe was once below me in 'every place) that widow whom I mentioned to you 'before. I had ſcarce caſt my eyes on this woman, 'before I was ſo ſhocked with the ſight, that it almoſt 'deprived me of my ſenſes; for the villain Hebbers 'came preſently in, and ſeated himſelf behind her.

'He had been almoſt a month from me, and I be-'lieved him to be at his quarters in Yorkſhire. Gueſs 'what were my ſenſations, when I beheld him ſitting 'by that baſe woman, and talking to her with the ut-'moſt familiarity! I could not long endure the ſight; 'and having acquainted my companion that I was 'taken ſuddenly ill, I forced her to go home with me at 'the end of the ſecond act.

'After a reſtleſs and ſleepleſs night, when I roſe the 'next morning, I had the comfort to receive a viſit 'from the woman of the houſe; who, after a very 'ſhort introduction, aſked me when I had heard from 'the captain, and when I expected to ſee him. I had 'not ſtrength or ſpirits to make her any anſwer; and 'ſhe proceeded thus---" Indeed, I did not think the

" Captain

" captain would have used me so. My husband was an
" officer of the army as well as himself; and if a body
" is a little low in the world, I am sure that is no rea-
" son for folks to trample on a body. I defy the world
" to say as I ever was guilty of any ill thing."---" For
" Heaven's sake, Madam!" says I, " what do you
" mean?---" Mean!" cries she; " I am sure if I had
" not thought you had been captain Hebber's lady, his
" lawful lady too, you should never have set footing in
" my house. I would have captain Hebbers know,
" that though I am reduced to let lodgings, I never
" have entertained any but persons of character." In
' this manner, Sir, she ran on, saying many shocking
' things not worth repeating, till my anger at last got
' the better of my patience, as well as my sorrow, and
' I pushed her out of the room.

' She had not been long gone, before her daughter
' came to me, and after many expressions of tenderness
' and pity, acquainted me, that her mother had just
' found out, by means of the captain's servant, that
' the captain was married to another lady: " which, if
" you did not know before, Madam," said she, " I
" am sorry to be the messenger of such ill news."

' Think, Mr. Booth, what I must have endured to
' see myself humbled before such a creature as this---
' the daughter of a woman who lets lodgings! however,
' having recollected myself a little, I thought it would
' be in vain to deny any thing; so knowing this to be
' one of the best-natured and most sensible girls in the
' world, I resolved to tell her my whole story, and for
' the future to make her my confidante. I answered
' her therefore with a good deal of assurance, that she
' need not regret telling me this piece of ill news, for
' I had known it before I came to her house.'

" Pardon me, Madam," replied the girl; " you
" cannot possibly have known it so long, for he hath
" not been married above a week; last night was the
" first time of his appearing in publick with his wife at
" the

" the play. Indeed, I knew very well the cause of
" your uneasiness there; but would not mention------"
"His wife at the play?" answered I eagerly:
" what wife! whom do you mean?"
"I mean the widow Carey, Madam," replied she;
" to whom the captain was married a few days since.
" His servant was here last night to pay for your
" lodging; and he told it my mother."

'I know not what answer I made, or whether I made
' any: I presently fell dead on the floor, and it was with
' great difficulty I was brought back to life by the poor
' girl; for neither the mother, nor the maid of the
' house, would lend me any assistance; both seemed to
' regard me rather as a monster than a woman.

'Scarce had I recovered the use of my senses, when I
' received a letter from the villain, declaring he had
' not assurance to see my face, and very kindly advi-
' sing me to endeavour to reconcile myself to my family;
' concluding with an offer, in case I did not succeed,
' to allow me twenty pounds a year to support me in
' some remote part of the kingdom.

'I need not mention my indignation at these propo-
' sals. In the highest agony of rage, I went in a chair
' to the detested house, where I easily got access to the
' wretch I had devoted to destruction; whom I no
' sooner found within my reach, than I plunged a
' drawn penknife, which I had prepared in my pocket
' for the purpose, into his accursed heart. For this
' fact I was immediately seized, and soon after commit-
' ted hither; and for this fact I am ready to die,
' and shall with pleasure receive the sentence of the law.

'Thus, Sir,' said she, 'I have related to you my
' unhappy story; and if I have tired your patience, by
' dwelling too long on those parts which affected me the
' most, I ask your pardon.'

Booth made a proper speech on this occasion; and having expressed much concern at her present situation, concluded, that he hoped her sentence would be milder than she seemed to expect.

Her reply to this was full of so much bitterness and indignation, that we do not think proper to record the speech at length: in which, having vented her passion, she all at once put on a serene countenance; and, with an air of great complacency, said---'Well, 'Mr. Booth, I think I have now a great right to 'satisfy my curiosity, at the expence of your breath. 'I may say it is not altogether a vain curiosity; for 'perhaps I have had inclination enough to interest my-'self in whatever concerns you: but no matter for that '---those days (added she with a sigh) are now over.'

Booth, who was extremely good-natured and well-bred, told her that she should not command him twice whatever was in his power: and then, after the usual apology, was going to begin his history, when the keeper arrived, and acquainted the lady that dinner was ready: at the same time saying---'I suppose, Madam, 'as the gentleman is an acquaintance of yours, he must 'dine with us too.'

Miss Matthews told the keeper that she had only one word to mention in private to the gentleman, and that then they would both attend him. She then pulled her purse from a pocket in which were upwards of twenty guineas, being the remainder of the money for which she had sold a gold repeating watch, her father's present, with some other trinkets, and desired Mr. Booth to take what he should have occasion for: saying---'You know, I believe, dear Will, I never valued mo-'ney; and now, I am sure, I shall have very little use 'for it.' Booth, with much difficulty, accepted of two guineas; and then they both together attended the keeper.

CHAP. X.

Table-talk; consisting of a facetious Discourse that passed in the Prison.

THERE were assembled at the table the governor of these (not improperly called infernal) regions; the lieutenant-governor, vulgarly named the first turnkey; Miss Matthews, Mr. Booth, Mr. Robinson, the gambler,

gambler, ſeveral other priſoners of both ſexes, and one Murphy an attorney.

The governor took the firſt opportunity to bring the affair of Miſs Matthews upon the carpet; and then turning to Murphy, he ſaid---'It is very lucky this 'gentleman happens to be preſent: I do aſſure you, Ma-'dam, your cauſe cannot be in abler hands. He is, 'I believe, the beſt man in England at a defence; I 'have known him often ſucceed againſt the moſt poſitive 'evidence.'

'Fie, Sir!' anſwered Murphy; 'you know I hate 'all this; but if the lady will truſt me with her cauſe, 'I will do the beſt in my power.---Come, Madam, do 'not be diſcouraged; a bit of manſlaughter and cold 'iron, I hope, will be the worſt: or perhaps we may 'come off better, with a ſlice of chance-medley, or *ſe* '*defendendo*.

'I am very ignorant of the law, Sir,' cries the lady.

'Yes, Madam,' anſwered Murphy; 'it cannot be 'expected you ſhould underſtand it. There are very 'few of us who profeſs it, that underſtand the whole; 'nor is it neceſſary we ſhould. There is a great deal of 'rubbiſh, of little uſe, about indictments, and abate-'ments, and bars, and ejectments, and trovers, and 'ſuch ſtuff, with which people cram their heads to little 'purpoſe. The chapter of evidence is the main buſi-'neſs; that is the ſheet anchor: that is the rudder 'which brings the veſſel ſafe *in portum*. Evidence is, 'indeed, the whole, the *ſumma totidis*; for *de non ap-'parentibus et non* inſiſtentibus, *eadem eſt ratio*.

'If you addreſs yourſelf to me, Sir,' ſaid the lady, 'you are much too learned, I aſſure you, for my under-'ſtanding.'

'*Tace*, Madam,' anſwered Murphy, is Latin for a 'candle; I commend your prudence. I ſhall know the 'particulars of your caſe when we are alone.'

'I hope the lady,' ſaid Robinſon, 'hath no ſuſpicion 'of any perſon here. I hope we are all perſons of ho-'nour at this table.'

'D---n my eyes, anſwered a well-dreſſed woman, 'I can anſwer for myſelf and the other ladies: though 'I never ſaw the lady in my life, ſhe need not be ſhy 'of us, d---n my eyes! I ſcorn to rap* againſt any 'lady.

'D---n me, Madam,' cried another lady, 'I honour 'what you have done. I once put a knife into a cull 'myſelf; ſo my ſervice to you, Madam; and I wiſh 'you may come off with *ſe diffidendo*, with all my 'heart.'

'I beg, good woman,' ſaid Miſs Matthews, 'you 'would talk on ſome other ſubject, and give yourſelf 'no concern about my affairs.'

'You ſee ladies,' cried Murphy, 'the gentlewoman 'doth not care to talk on this matter before company; 'ſo pray do not preſs her.'

'Nay, I value the lady's acquaintance no more than 'ſhe values mine,' cries the firſt woman who ſpoke. 'I have kept as good company as the lady, I believe, 'every day in the week. Good woman! I do not uſe 'to be ſo treated: if the lady ſays ſuch another word 'to me, d---n me, I will darken her day-lights. 'Marry come up, good woman! The lady's a whore 'as well as myſelf; and though I am ſent hither to 'mill doll, d---n my eyes! I have money enough to 'buy it off as well as the lady herſelf.'

Action might, perhaps, ſoon have followed this ſpeech, had not the keeper interpoſed his authority, and put an end to any farther diſpute. Soon after which the company broke up; and none but himſelf, Mr. Murphy, Captain Booth, and Miſs Matthews, remained together.

Miſs Matthews, then, at the entreaty of the keeper, began to open her caſe to Mr. Murphy, whom ſhe admitted to be her ſolicitor, though ſhe ſtill declared ſhe was indifferent as to the event of the trial.

Mr. Murphy having heard all the particulars, with

* A cant word, meaning to ſwear, or rather to perjure yourſelf.

which

which the reader is already acquainted, (as far as related to the murder) ſhook his head, and ſaid---' There 'is but one circumſtance, Madam, which I wiſh was 'out of the caſe; and that we muſt put out of it: I 'mean the carrying the penknife drawn into the room 'with you; for that ſeems to imply malice prepenſive, 'as we call it in the law: this circumſtance, therefore, 'muſt not appear againſt you; and if the ſervant who 'was in the room obſerved this, he muſt be bought off 'at all hazards. All here, you ſay, are friends; there-'fore, I tell you openly, you muſt furniſh me with 'money ſufficient for this purpoſe. Malice is all we 'have to guard againſt.

'I would not preſume, Sir,' cries Booth, 'to inform 'you in the law; but I have heard, in caſe of ſtabbing, 'a man may be indicted upon the ſtatute; and it is 'capital, though no malice appears.'

'You ſay true, Sir,' anſwered Murphy: 'a man 'may be indicted *contra formam ſtatutis*; and that 'method, I allow you, requires no malice. I preſume, 'you are a lawyer, Sir?'

'No, indeed, Sir,' anſwered Booth; 'I know nothing 'of the law.'

'Then, Sir, I will tell you. If a man be indicted '*contra formam ſtatutis*, as we ſay, no malice is ne-'ceſſary; becauſe the form of the ſtatute makes ma-'lice: and then what we have to guard againſt is, 'having ſtruck the firſt blow. Pox on't, it is unlucky 'this was done in a room: if it had been in the ſtreet, 'we could have had five or ſix witneſſes to have proved 'the firſt blow, cheaper than I am afraid we ſhall get 'this one; for when a man knows, from the unhappy 'circumſtances of the caſe, that you can procure no 'other witneſs but himſelf, he is always dear. It is 'ſo in all other ways of buſineſs. I am very *implicit* 'you ſee; but we are all among friends. The ſafeſt 'way is to furniſh me with money enough to offer him 'a good round ſum at once; and I think (it is for your 'good I ſpeak) fifty pounds is the leaſt that can be

'offered him. I do assure you, I would offer him no 'less, was it my own case.'

'And do you think, Sir,' said she, 'that I would 'save my life at the expence of hiring another to per-'jure himself?'

'Aye, surely do I,' cries Murphy: 'for where is 'the fault, admitting there is some fault in perjury, as 'you call it? And, to be sure, it is such a matter as every 'man would rather wish to avoid than not; and yet, 'as it may be managed, there is not so much as some 'people are apt to imagine in it; for he need not kiss 'the book, and then, pray, where is the perjury? But 'if the cryer is sharper than ordinary, what is it he 'kisses? Is it any thing but a bit of calf's skin? I am 'sure a man must be a very bad Christian himself who 'would not do so much as that to save the life of any 'Christian whatever, much more of so pretty a lady. 'Indeed, Madam, if we can make out but a tolerable 'case, so much beauty will go a great way with the 'judge, and the jury too.'

The latter part of this speech, notwithstanding the mouth it came from, caused Miss Matthews to suppress much of the indignation which began to arise at the former; and she answered with a smile---'Sir, you are 'a great casuist in these matters; but we need argue no 'longer concerning them; for if fifty pounds would 'save my life, I assure you I could not command that 'sum. The little money I have in my pocket is all I 'can call my own; and, I apprehend, in the situation 'I am in, I shall have very little of that to spare.'

'Come, come, Madam,' cries Murphy, 'life is 'sweet, let me tell you; and never sweeter than when 'we are near losing it. I have known many a man 'very brave and undaunted at his first commitment, 'who, when business began to thicken a little upon 'him, hath changed his note. It is no time to be sav-'ing, in your condition.'

The keeper, who, after the liberality of Miss Matthews, and on seeing a purse of guineas in her hand, had

had conceived a great opinion of her wealth, no ſooner heard that the ſum which he had, in intention, entirely confiſcated for his own uſe, was attempted to be broke in upon, than he thought it high time to be upon his guard. 'To be ſure,' cries he, 'Mr. Murphy, life is 'ſweet, as you ſay; that muſt be acknowledged: to be 'ſure, life is ſweet! but, ſweet as it is, no perſon can 'advance more than they are worth to ſave it. And, 'indeed, if the lady can command no more money than 'that little ſhe mentions, ſhe is to be commended for 'her unwillingneſs to part with any of it; for, to be 'ſure, as ſhe ſays, ſhe will want every farthing of that, 'to live like a gentlewoman till ſhe comes to her trial. 'And, to be ſure, as ſweet as life is, people ought to 'take care to be able to live ſweetly while they do live; 'beſides, I cannot help ſaying, the lady ſhews herſelf 'to be what ſhe is, by her abhorrence of perjury, which 'is certainly a very dreadful crime. And, though the 'not kiſſing the book doth, as you ſay, make a great 'deal of difference; and, if a man had a great while 'to live and repent, perhaps he might ſwallow it well 'enough; yet, when people comes to be near their end, '(as who can venture to foretel what will be the lady's 'caſe) they ought to take care not to overburden their 'conſcience. I hope the lady's caſe will not be found 'murder; for I am ſure I always wiſh well to all my 'priſoners, who ſhew themſelves to be gentlemen, or 'gentlewomen; yet one ſhould always fear the worſt.'

'Indeed, Sir, you ſpeak like an oracle,' anſwered the lady; 'and one ſubornation of perjury would ſit 'heavier on my conſcience, than twenty ſuch murders 'as I am guilty of.'

'Nay, to be ſure, Madam,' anſwered the keeper, 'nobody can pretend to tell what provocation you muſt 'have had; and certainly, it can never be imagined, 'that a lady who behaves herſelf ſo handſomely as you 'have done ever ſince you have been under my keys, 'ſhould be guilty of killing a man without being very 'highly provoked to do it.'

Mr. Murphy was, I believe, going to anſwer, when he was called out of the room; after which, nothing paſſed between the remaining perſons worth relating, till Booth and the lady retired back again into the lady's apartment.

Here they fell immediately to commenting on the foregoing diſcourſe: but as their comments were, I believe, the ſame with what moſt readers have made on the ſame occaſion, we ſhall omit them. At laſt, Miſs Matthews reminding her companion of his promiſe of relating to her what had befallen him ſince the interruption of their former acquaintance, he began, as is written in the next book of this hiſtory.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

In which Captain Booth begins to relate his Hiſtory.

THE tea table being removed, and Mr. Booth and the lady left alone, he proceeded as follows---

'Since you deſire, Madam, to know the particulars 'of my courtſhip to that beſt and deareſt of women, 'whom I afterwards married, I will endeavour to recol'lect them as well as I can; at leaſt all thoſe incidents 'which are moſt worth relating to you.

'If the vulgar opinion of fatality in marriage had 'ever any ſanction, it ſurely appeared in my mar'riage with my Amelia. I knew her in the firſt dawn 'of her beauty; and, I believe, Madam, ſhe had as 'much as ever fell to the ſhare of a woman; but 'though I always admired her, it was long without any 'ſpark of love. Perhaps the general admiration which 'at that time purſued her, the reſpect paid her by per'ſons of the higheſt rank, and the numberleſs addreſſes 'which were made her by men of great fortune, pre'vented my aſpiring at the poſſeſſion of thoſe charms, 'which ſeemed ſo abſolutely out of my reach. How'ever it was, I aſſure you, the accident which deprived 'her of the admiration of others, made the firſt great

'im-

'impression on my heart in her favour. The injury 'done to her beauty by the overturning of a chaise, by 'which, as you may well remember, her lovely nose 'was beat all to pieces, gave me an assurance that the 'woman who had been so much adored for the charms 'of her person, deserved a much higher adoration to be 'paid to her mind; for that she was in the latter re- 'spect infinitely more superior to the rest of her sex, 'than she had ever been in the former.'

'I admire your taste extremely,' cried the lady. 'I 'remember perfectly well the great heroism with which 'your Amelia bore that misfortune.'---'Good Heavens! 'Madam,' answered he, 'what a magnanimity of 'mind did her behaviour demonstrate! If the world 'have extolled the firmness of soul in a man who can 'support the loss of fortune; of a general who can be 'composed after the loss of a victory; or of a king 'who can be contented with the loss of a crown; with 'what astonishment ought we to behold, with what 'praises to honour, a young lady who can, with 'patience and resignation, submit to the loss of exquisite 'beauty: in other words, to the loss of fortune, power, 'glory; every thing which human nature is apt to 'court and rejoice in! What must be the mind, which 'can bear to be deprived of all these in a moment, and, 'by an unfortunate, trifling accident; which could 'support all this, together with the most exquisite tor- 'ments of body, and with dignity, with resignation, 'without complaining, almost without a tear, undergo 'the most painful and dreadful operations of surgery in 'such a situation.' Here he stopped, and a torrent of tears gushed from his eyes; such tears as are apt to flow from a truly noble heart at the hearing of any thing surprisingly great and glorious. As soon as he was able, he again proceeded thus---

'Would you think, Miss Matthews, that the mis- 'fortune of my Amelia was capable of any aggrava- 'tion! I assure you, she hath often told me it was 'aggravated with a circumstance, which outweighed all

'the

'the other ingredients. This was the cruel insults 'she received from some of her most intimate acquaintance; several of whom, after many distortions and 'grimaces have turned their heads aside, unable to support their secret triumph, and burst into a loud laugh 'in her hearing.'

'Good Heaven!' cried Miss Matthews, 'what detestable actions will this contemptible passion of envy 'prevail on our sex to commit!'

'An occasion of this kind, as she hath since told me, 'made the first impression on her gentle heart in my 'favour. I was one day in company with several 'young ladies, or rather young devils, where poor 'Amelia's accident was the subject of much mirth and 'pleasantry. One of these said, she hoped Miss would 'not hold her head so high for the future. Another 'answered---" I do not know, Madam, what she may "do with her head, but I am convinced she will never, "more turn up her nose at her betters." Another 'cried---" What a very proper match might now be "made between Amelia and a certain captain!" who 'had unfortunately received an injury in the same part, 'though from no shameful cause. Many other sarcasms were thrown out, very unworthy to be repeated. 'I was hurt with perceiving so much malice in human 'shape; and cried out, very bluntly---" Indeed, ladies, "you need not express such satisfaction at poor Miss "Emily's accident; for she will still be the handsomest woman in England." This speech of mine 'was variously repeated; by some to my honour, and 'by others represented in a contrary light: indeed, it 'was often reported to be much ruder than it was. 'However, it at length reached Amelia's ears. She 'said, she was very much obliged to me; since I could 'have so much compassion for her as to be rude to a 'lady on her account.

'About a month after the accident, when Amelia 'began to see company in a mask, I had the honour to 'drink tea with her. We were alone together; and I

'begged her to indulge my curiosity by shewing me her 'face. She answered, in a most obliging manner---"Perhaps, Mr. Booth, you will as little know me "when my mask is off as when it is on;" and at the 'same instant unmasked. The surgeon's skill was the 'least I considered. A thousand tender ideas rushed 'all at once on my mind. I was unable to contain my-'self; and, eagerly kissing her hand, I cried---"Upon "my soul, Madam, you never appeared to me so "lovely as at this instant!" Nothing more remarka-'ble passed at this visit; but I sincerely believe we were 'neither of us hereafter indifferent to each other.

'Many months, however, passed after this, before I 'ever thought seriously of making her my wife. Not 'that I wanted sufficient love for Amelia: indeed, it 'arose from the vast affection I bore her. I considered 'my own as a desperate fortune, her's as entirely de-'pendent on her mother; who was a woman, you 'know, of violent passions, and very unlikely to con-'sent to a match so highly contrary to the interest of 'her daughter. The more I loved Amelia, the more 'firmly I resolved within myself never to propose love to 'her seriously. Such a dupe was my understanding to 'my heart! and so foolishly did I imagine I could be 'master of a flame to which I was every day adding 'fuel!

'O Miss Matthews! we have heard of men entirely 'masters of their passions, and of hearts which can 'carry this fire in them, and conceal it at their pleasure! 'Perhaps there may be such; but, if there are, those 'hearts may be compared, I believe, to damps, in 'which it is more difficult to keep fire alive than to 'prevent its blazing: in mine, it was placed in the 'midst of combustible matter.

'After several visits, in which looks and sighs had 'been interchanged on both sides, but without the 'least mention of passion in private, one day the discourse 'between us, when alone, happened to turn on love: 'I say happened; for I protest it was not designed on 'my

'my side, and I am as firmly convinced not on her's. 'I was now no longer master of myself: I declared 'myself the most wretched of all martyrs to this tender 'passion---that I had long concealed it from its object. 'At length, after mentioning many particulars---sup-'pressing, however, those which must necessarily have 'brought it home to Amelia---I concluded with beg-'ging her to be the confidante of my amour, and to 'give me her advice on that occasion.

'Amelia---O, I shall never forget the dear perturba-'tion!---appeared all confused at this instant. She 'trembled, turned pale, and discovered how well she 'understood me, by a thousand more symptoms than I 'could take notice of, in a state of mind so very little 'different from her own. At last, with faultering 'accents, she said, I had made a very ill choice of a 'counsellor in a matter in which she was so ignorant: 'adding, at last,---"I believe, Mr. Booth, you gen-"tlemen want very little advice in these affairs, which "you all understand better than we do."

'I will relate no more of our conversation at pre-'sent; indeed, I am afraid I tire you with too many 'particulars.'

'O no,' answered she, 'I should be glad to hear 'every step of an amour which had so tender a begin-'ning. Tell me every thing you said or did, if you 'can remember it.'

'He then proceeded; and so will we in the next chapter.

CHAP. II.

Mr. Booth continues his Story. In this Chapter there are some Passages that may serve as a Kind of Touch-stone, by which a young Lady may examine the Heart of her Lover. I would advise, therefore, that every Lover be obliged to read it over in the Presence of his Mistress, and that she carefully watch his Emotions while he is reading.

'I Was under the utmost concern,' cries Booth, 'when I retired from my visit, and had reflected 'coolly on what I had said. I now saw plainly that I

had

'had made downright love to Amelia; and I feared, 'ſuch was my vanity, that I had already gone too far, 'and been too ſucceſsful. Feared! do I ſay? Could I 'fear what I hoped? How ſhall I deſcribe the anxiety 'of my mind!'

'You need give yourſelf no great pain,' cried Miſs Matthews, 'to deſcribe what I can ſo eaſily gueſs. To 'be honeſt with you, Mr. Booth, I do not agree with 'your lady's opinion, that the men have a ſuperior un-'derſtanding in matters of love. Men are often blind 'to the paſſions of women; but every woman is as quick 'ſighted as a hawk on theſe occaſions: nor is there one 'article in the whole ſcience which is not underſtood by 'all our ſex.'

'However, Madam,' ſaid Mr. Booth, 'I now un-'dertook to deceive Amelia. I abſtained three days 'from ſeeing her: to ſay the truth, I endeavoured to 'work myſelf up to a reſolution of leaving her for ever; 'but when I could not ſo far ſubdue my paſſion---But 'why do I talk nonſenſe, of ſubduing paſſion! I ſhould 'ſay, when no other paſſion could ſurmount my love, I 'returned to viſit her; and now I attempted the ſtrangeſt 'project which ever entered into the ſilly head of a lover. 'This was to perſuade Amelia that I was really in love 'in another place, and had literally expreſſed my mean-'ing, when I aſked her advice, and deſired her to be my 'confidante.

'I therefore forged a meeting to have been between 'me and my imaginary miſtreſs, ſince I had laſt ſeen 'Amelia; and related the particulars, as well as I could 'invent them, which had paſſed at our converſation.

'Poor Amelia preſently ſwallowed this bait; and, as 'ſhe hath told me ſince, abſolutely believed me to be in 'earneſt! Poor dear love! how ſhould the ſinცereſt of 'hearts have any idea of deceit! For with all her ſimpli-'city, I aſſure you ſhe is the moſt ſenſible woman in the 'world.'

'It is highly generous and good in you,' ſaid Miſs Matthews, with a ſly ſneer, 'to impute to honeſty what 'others would perhaps call credulity.'

'I proteſt, Madam,' anſwered he, 'I do her no more
'than juſtice. A good heart will at all times betray
'the beſt head in the world. Well, Madam, my angel
'was now, if poſſible, more confuſed than before. She
'looked ſo ſilly, you can hardly believe it.'

'Yes, yes, I can,' anſwered the lady, with a laugh,
'I can believe it. Well, go on.'---'After ſome heſita-
'tion,' cried he, 'my Amelia ſaid faintly to me---
"Mr. Booth, you uſe me very ill; you deſire me to be
"your confidante, and conceal from me the name of
"your miſtreſs."

"Is it poſſible, then, Madam," anſwered I, "that
"you cannot gueſs her, when I tell you ſhe is one of
"your acquaintance, and lives in this town?"

"My acquaintance!" ſaid ſhe, "La! Mr. Booth.---
"In this town! I---I---I thought I could have gueſſed
"for once: but I have an ill talent that way; I will
"never attempt to gueſs any thing again." 'Indeed, I
'do her an injury when I pretend to repreſent her manner.
'Her manner, look, voice, every thing, was inimitable!
'Such ſweetneſs, ſoftneſs, innocence, modeſty! Upon
'my ſoul, if ever man could boaſt of his reſolution, I
'think I might now, that I abſtained from falling proſ-
'trate at her feet, and adoring her! However, I tri-
'umphed: pride, I believe, triumphed; or, perhaps,
'love got the better of love. We once more parted;
'and I promiſed, the next time I ſaw her, to reveal the
'name of my miſtreſs.

'I now had, I thought, gained a complete victory
'over myſelf; and no ſmall compliments did I pay to
'my own reſolution. In ſhort, I triumphed as cowards
'and niggards do when they flatter themſelves with
'having given ſome ſuppoſed inſtance of courage or
'generoſity: and my triumph laſted as long; that is to
'ſay, till my aſcendant paſſion had a proper opportu-
'nity of diſplaying itſelf in its true and natural colours.

'Having hitherto ſucceeded ſo well in my own opi-
'nion, and obtained this mighty ſelf-conqueſt; I now
'entertained a deſign of exerting the moſt romantic ge-
'neroſity,

'nerosity, and of curing that unhappy passion which I 'perceived I had raised in Amelia.

'Among the ladies who had expressed the greatest satisfaction at my Amelia's misfortune, Miss Osborne 'had distinguished herself in a very eminent degree; she 'was, indeed, the next in beauty to my angel; nay, she 'had disputed the preference, and had some among her 'admirers who were blind enough to give it in her 'favour.'

'Well,' cries the lady, 'I will allow you to call 'them blind; but Miss Osborne was a charming girl.'

'She certainly was handsome,' answered he, 'and a 'very considerable fortune; so I thought my Amelia 'would have little difficulty in believing me, when I 'fixed on her as my mistress. And I concluded, that 'my thus placing my affections on her known enemy, 'would be the surest method of eradicating every tender idea with which I had been ever honoured by 'Amelia.

'Well, then, to Amelia I went: she received me with 'more than usual coldness and reserve; in which, to confess the truth, there appeared to me more of anger than 'indifference, and more of dejection than of either. 'After some short introduction, I revived the discourse 'of my amour, and presently mentioned Miss Osborne 'as the lady whose name I had concealed; adding, 'that the true reason why I did not mention her before, 'was, that I apprehended there was some little distance 'between them, which I hoped to have the happiness 'of accommodating.

'Amelia answered, with much gravity---"If you "know, Sir, that there is any distance between us, I "suppose you know the reason of that distance; and "then, I think, I could not have expected to be affronted by her name. I would not have you think, Mr. "Booth, that I hate Miss Osborne. No! Heaven is "my witness, I despise her too much. Indeed, when I "reflect how much I loved the woman who hath treated "me so cruelly, I own it gives me pain. When I lay,

"as I then imagined, and as all about me believed, "upon my death-bed, in all the agonies of pain and "misery, to become the object of laughter to my dear-"est friend! O Mr. Booth, it is a cruel reflection! "And could I, after this, have expected from you--- "But why not from you, to whom I am a person en-"tirely indifferent, if such a friend could treat me so "barbarously?"

'During the greatest part of this speech, the tears 'streamed from her bright eyes. I could endure it no 'longer. I caught up the word indifferent, and re-'peated it, saying---"Do you think, then, Madam, "that Miss Emily is indifferent to me?"

"Yes, surely, I do," answered she; "I know I "am: indeed, why should I not be indifferent to "you?"

"Have my eyes," said I, "then declared nothing?"

"O there is no need of your eyes!" answered she. "Your tongue hath declared that you have singled out, "of all womankind, my greatest, I will say, my basest "enemy. I own, I once thought that character would "have been no recommendation to you---But why did "I think so? I was born to deceive myself."

'I then fell on my knees before her; and, forcing her 'hand, cried out---"O my Amelia! I can bear no "longer. You are the only mistress of my affections; "you are the deity I adore!" 'In this stile I ran on 'for two or three minutes, what it is impossible to re-'peat, till a torrent of contending passions, together 'with the surprize, overpowered her gentle spirits, and 'she fainted away in my arms.

'To describe my sensation till she returned to herself, 'is not in my power.'---'You need not,' cried Miss Matthews. 'Oh, happy Amelia! why had I not been 'blessed with such a passion?'---'I am convinced, Ma-'dam,' continued he, 'you cannot expect all the par-'ticulars of the tender scene which ensued. I was not 'enough in my senses to remember it all. Let it suffice 'to say, that that behaviour with which Amelia, while

'ignorant of it's motive, had been ſo much diſpleaſed, 'when ſhe became ſenſible of that motive, proved the 'ſtrongeſt recommendation to her favour; and ſhe was 'pleaſed to call it generous.'

'Generous!' repeated the lady; 'and ſo it was al-'moſt beyond the reach of humanity. I queſtion whe-'ther you ever had an equal.'

Perhaps the critical reader may have the ſame doubt with Miſs Matthews; and, leſt he ſhould, we will here make a gap in our hiſtory, to give him an opportunity of accurately conſidering whether this conduct of Mr. Booth was natural or no; and, conſequently, whether we have in this place maintained or deviated from that ſtrict adherence to univerſal truth which we profeſs above all other hiſtorians.

CHAP. III.

The Narrative continued. More of the Touchſtone.

BOOTH made a proper acknowledgment of Miſs Matthews's civility, and then renewed his ſtory.

'We were upon the footing of lovers; and Amelia 'threw off her reſerve more and more, till at length I 'found all that return of my affection which the tendereſt 'lover can require.

'My ſituation would now have been a paradiſe, had 'not my happineſs been interrupted with the ſame re-'flections I have already mentioned: had I not, in ſhort, 'concluded, that I muſt derive all my joys from the 'almoſt certain ruin of that dear creature to whom I 'ſhould owe them.

'This thought haunted me night and day; till I, at 'laſt, grew unable to ſupport it: I therefore reſolved, 'in the ſtrongeſt manner, to lay it before Amelia.

'One evening, then, after the higheſt profeſſions of 'the moſt diſintereſted love, in which Heaven knows my 'ſincerity, I took an occaſion to ſpeak to Amelia in the 'following manner---

"Too true it is, I am afraid, my deareſt creature, "that the higheſt human happineſs is imperfect! How "rich would be my cup, was it not for one poiſonous

" drop which embitters the whole!---O Amelia! what " must be the consequence of my ever having the honour to call you mine!---You know my situation in " life; and you know your own. I have nothing more " than the poor provision of an ensign's commission to " depend on: your sole dependance is on your mother. " Should any act of disobedience defeat your expectations, how wretched must your lot be with me! O " Amelia! how ghastly an object to my mind is the " apprehension of your distress! Can I bear to reflect a " moment on the certainty of your foregoing all the " conveniences of life; on the possibility of your suffering all its most dreadful inconveniences! What must " be my misery, then, to see you in such a situation, " and to upbraid myself with being the accursed cause " of bringing you to it! Suppose, too, in such a season, I " should be summoned from you; could I submit to " see you encounter all the hazards, the fatigues of " war, with me! You could not yourself, however " willing, support them a single campaign. What, " then, must I leave you to starve alone, deprived of the " tenderness of a husband! deprived, too, of the tenderness of the best of mothers, through my means; a " woman most dear to me, for being the parent, the " nurse, and the friend, of my Amelia. But, O my " sweet creature! carry your thoughts a little farther. " Think of the tenderest consequences, the dearest pledges " of our love! Can I bear to think of entailing beggary " on the posterity of my Amelia; on our---O Heavens! " ---on our children?---On the other side, is it possible " even to mention the word---I will not, must not, cannot, cannot part with you!---What must we do, " Amelia? It is now I sincerely ask your advice?"

"What advice can I give you," said she, "in such " an alternative? Would to Heaven we had never " met!"

'These words were accompanied with a sigh, and a ' look inexpressibly tender, the tears at the same time ' overflowing all her lovely cheeks. I was endeavour-

'ing to reply, when I was interrupted by what ſoon put 'an end to the ſcene.

'Our amour had already been buzzed all over the 'town; and it came at laſt to the ears of Mrs. Harris. 'I had, indeed, obſerved of late a great alteration in 'that lady's behaviour towards me, whenever I viſited 'at the houſe; nor could I for a long time, before this 'evening, ever obtain a private interview with Amelia; 'and now, it ſeems, I owed it to her mother's intention 'of overhearing all that paſſed between us.

'At the period, then, above-mentioned, Mrs. Harris 'burſt from the cloſet, where ſhe had hid herſelf, and 'ſurprized her daughter, reclining on my boſom, in all 'that tender ſorrow I have juſt deſcribed. I will not 'attempt to paint the rage of the mother, or the daugh- 'ter's confuſion, or my own. "Here are very fine do- "ings, indeed!" cries Mrs. Harris. "You have "made a noble uſe, Amelia, of my indulgence, and "the truſt I repoſed in you!---As for you, Mr. Booth, "I will not accuſe you; you have uſed my child as I "ought to have expected: I may thank myſelf for what "hath happened!" 'with much more of the ſame kind, 'before ſhe would ſuffer me to ſpeak. But, at laſt, I 'obtained a hearing; and offered to excuſe my poor 'Amelia, who was ready to ſink into the earth under 'the oppreſſion of grief, by taking as much blame as I 'could on myſelf. Mrs. Harris anſwered---"No, Sir, "I muſt ſay you are innocent in compariſon of her: "nay, I can ſay, I have heard you uſe diſſuaſive argu- "ments; and I promiſe you they are of weight. I "have, I thank Heaven, one dutiful child; and I ſhall "henceforth think her my only one." 'She then forced 'the poor, trembling, fainting Amelia, out of the 'room; which when ſhe had done, ſhe began very coolly 'to reaſon with me on the folly, as well as iniquity, 'which I had been guilty of; and repeated to me al- 'moſt every word I had before urged to her daughter. 'In fine, ſhe at laſt obtained of me a promiſe that I 'would ſoon go to my regiment, and ſubmit to any 'miſery, rather than that of being the ruin of Amelia.

'I now, for many days, endured the greatest torments 'which the human mind is, I believe, capable of feel- 'ing; and I can honestly say, I tried all the means, 'and applied every argument which I could raise, to 'cure me of my love: and, to make these the more ef- 'fectual, I spent every night in walking backwards and 'forwards in sight of Mrs. Harris's house; where I 'never failed to find some object or other which raised 'some tender idea of my lovely Amelia, and almost 'drove me to distraction.'

'And don't you think, Sir,' said Miss Matthews, 'you took a most preposterous method to cure your- 'self?'

'Alas! Madam,' answered he, 'you cannot see it 'in a more absurd light than I do; but those know 'little of real love or grief, who do not know how much 'we deceive ourselves when we pretend to aim at the 'cure of either. It is with these, as it is with some 'distempers of the body, nothing is in the least agree- 'able to us but what serves to heighten the disease.

'At the end of a fortnight, when I was driven al- 'most to the highest degree of despair, and could con- 'trive no method of conveying a letter to Amelia, how 'was I surprized, when Mrs. Harris's servant brought 'me a card, with an invitation from the mother herself 'to drink tea that evening at her house!

'You will easily believe, Madam, that I did not fail 'so agreeable an appointment. On my arrival, I was 'introduced into a large company of men and women, 'Mrs. Harris and my Amelia being part of the com- 'pany.

'Amelia seemed in my eyes to look more beautiful 'than ever, and behaved with all the gaiety imaginable. 'The old lady treated me with much civility; but the 'young lady took little notice of me, and addressed most 'of her discourse to another gentleman present. Indeed, 'she now and then gave me a look of no discouraging 'kind; and I observed her colour change more than 'once, when her eyes met mine: circumstances which,

'perhaps

'perhaps, ought to have afforded me sufficient comfort; 'but they could not allay the thousand doubts and fears 'with which I was alarmed; for my anxious thoughts 'suggested no less to me, than that Amelia had made 'her peace with her mother at the price of abandoning 'me for-ever, and of giving her ear to some other lover. 'All my prudence now vanished at once; and I would 'that instant have gladly run away with Amelia, and 'have married her, without the least consideration of any 'consequences.

'With such thoughts I had tormented myself for 'near two hours, till most of the company had taken 'their leave. This I was myself incapable of doing: 'nor do I know when I should have put an end to my 'visit, had not Dr. Harrison taken me away almost by 'force; telling me, in a whisper, that he had some-'thing to say to me of great importance.---You know 'the doctor, Madam.'

'Very well, Sir,' answered Miss Matthews; 'and 'one of the best men in the world he is, and an honour 'to the sacred order to which he belongs.'

'You will judge,' replied Booth, 'by the sequel, 'whether I have reason to think him so.' He then pro-'ceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. IV.

The Story of Mr. Booth continued. In this Chapter the Reader will perceive a Glimpse of the Character of a very good Divine; with some Matters of a very tender kind.

'THE doctor conducted me into his study; and then 'desiring me to sit down, began, as near as I can 'remember, in these words, or at least to this purpose---

"You cannot imagine, young gentleman, that your "love for Miss Emily is any secret in this place; I have "known it some time; and have been, I assure you, "very much your enemy in this affair."

'I answered, that I was very much obliged to him.'

"Why, so you are," replied he; "and so perhaps "you will think yourself, when you know all. I went

"about

" about a fortnight ago to Mrs. Harris, to acquaint " her with my apprehenſions on her daughter's account; " for though the matter was much talked of, I thought " it might poſſibly not have reached her ears. I will " be very plain with you. I adviſed her to take all " poſſible care of the young lady, and even to ſend her " to ſome place where ſhe might be effectually kept out " of your reach while you remained in the town."

" And do you think, Sir," ſaid I, " that this was " acting a kind part by me? or do you expect that I " ſhould thank you on this occaſion?"

" Young man," anſwered he, " I did not intend you " any kindneſs; nor do I deſire any of your thanks. " My intention was to preſerve a worthy lady from a " young fellow of whom I had heard no good character, " and whom I imagined to have a deſign of ſtealing a " human creature for the ſake of her fortune."

" It was very kind of you, indeed," anſwered I, " to entertain ſuch an opinion of me."

" Why, Sir," replied the doctor, " it is the opinion " which, I believe, moſt of you young gentlemen of " the order of the rag deſerve. I have known ſome " inſtances, and have heard of more, where ſuch young " fellows have committed robbery under the name of " marriage."

' I was going to interrupt him with ſome anger, ' when he deſired me to have a little patience; and then ' informed me, that he had viſited Mrs. Harris, with ' the above-mentioned deſign, the evening after the ' diſcovery I have related; that Mrs. Harris, without ' waiting for his information, had recounted to him all ' which had happened the evening before: and, indeed, ' ſhe muſt have an excellent memory, for I think ſhe ' repeated every word I ſaid; and added, that ſhe had ' confined her daughter to her chamber, where ſhe kept ' her a cloſe priſoner, and had not ſeen her ſince.

' I cannot expreſs, nor would modeſty ſuffer me if I ' could, all that now paſſed. The doctor took me by ' the hand, and burſt forth into the warmeſt commenda-

' tions

'tions of the ſenſe and generoſity which he was pleaſed 'to ſay diſcovered themſelves in my ſpeech. You know, 'Madam, his ſtrong and ſingular way of expreſſing 'himſelf on all occaſions, eſpecially when he is affected 'with any thing. ' Sir," ſaid he, " if I knew half a " dozen ſuch inſtances in the army, the painter ſhould " put red liveries upon all the ſaints in my cloſet!"

'From this inſtant, the doctor told me, he had be-'come my friend and zealous advocate with Mrs. Har-'ris, on whom he had at laſt prevailed, though not 'without the greateſt difficulty, to conſent to my mar-'rying Amelia, upon condition that I ſettled every 'penny which the mother ſhould lay down; and that 'ſhe ſhould retain a certain ſum in her hands, which 'ſhe would at any time depoſit for my advancement in 'the army.

'You will, I hope, Madam, conceive that I made 'no heſitation at theſe conditions; nor need I mention 'the joy which I felt on this occaſion, or the acknow-'ledgment I paid the doctor; who is, indeed, as you 'ſay, one of the beſt of men.

'The next morning I had permiſſion to viſit Amelia, 'who received me in ſuch a manner, that I now con-'cluded my happineſs to be compleat.

'Every thing was now agreed on all ſides, and 'lawyers employed to prepare the writings; when an 'unexpected cloud aroſe ſuddenly in our ſerene ſky, and 'all our joys were obſcured in a moment.

'When matters were, as I apprehended, drawing 'near a concluſion, I received an expreſs that a ſiſter, 'whom I tenderly loved, was ſeized with a violent fe-'ver, and earneſtly deſired me to come to her. I im-'mediately obeyed the ſummons; and, as it was then 'about two in the morning, without ſtaying even to 'take leave of Amelia, for whom I left a ſhort billet, 'acquainting her with the reaſon of my abſence.

'The gentleman's houſe where my ſiſter then was 'ſtood at fifty miles diſtance; and, though I uſed the 'utmoſt expedition, the unmerciful diſtemper had, be-

'fore

'fore my arrival, entirely deprived the poor girl of her 'senses, as it did soon after of her life.

'Not all the love I bore Amelia, nor the tumultuous 'delight with which the approaching hour of possessing 'her filled my heart, could for a while allay my grief 'at the loss of my beloved Nancy. Upon my soul, I 'cannot yet mention her name without tears! Never 'brother and sister had, I believe, a higher friendship 'for each other. Poor dear girl! whilst I sat by her 'in her light-headed fits, she repeated scarce any other 'name but mine: and it plainly appeared that, when 'her dear reason was ravished away from her, it had left 'my image on her fancy, and that the last use she had 'made of it was to think on me.---"Send for my dear "Billy immediately!" she cried: "I know he will "come to me in a moment. Will nobody fetch him "to me? Pray, don't kill me before I see him once "more! You durst not use me so if he was here!"--- 'Every accent still rings in my ears---O Heavens! to 'hear this, and at the same time to see the poor deliri-'ous creature deriving the greatest horrors from my 'sight, and mistaking me for a highwayman who had 'a little before robbed her! But I ask your pardon; the 'sensations I felt are to be known only from experience, 'and to you must appear dull and insipid. At last, she 'seemed for a moment to know me; and cried---"O "Heavens! my dearest brother!" upon which she fell 'into immediate convulsions, and died away in my 'arms.'

Here Booth stopped a moment, and wiped his eyes; and Miss Matthews, perhaps out of complaisance, wiped hers.

CHAP. V.

Containing strange Revolutions of Fortune.

BOOTH proceeded thus---

'This loss, perhaps, Madam, you will think, 'had made me miserable enough; but Fortune did not 'think so: for on the day when my Nancy was to be 'buried, a courier arrived from Dr. Harrison with a

'letter, in which the doctor acquainted me that he was 'just come from Mrs. Harris when he dispatched the 'express; and earnestly desired me to return the very 'instant I received his letter, as I valued my Amelia. "Though, if the daughter," added he, "should take "after her mother, (as most of them do) it will be, "perhaps, wiser in you to stay away."

'I presently sent for the messenger into my room, and 'with difficulty extorted from him, that a great squire 'in his coach and six was come to Mrs. Harris's, and 'that the whole town said he was shortly to be married 'to Amelia.

'I now soon perceived how much superior my love 'for Amelia was to every other passion. Poor Nancy's 'idea disappeared in a moment. I quitted the dear 'lifeless corpse, over which I had shed a thousand tears; 'left the care of the funeral to others; and posted, I 'may almost say flew, back to Amelia, and alighted at 'the Doctor's house, as he had desired me in his letter.

'The good man presently acquainted me with what 'had happened in my absence. Mr. Winckworth had, 'it seems, arrived the very day of my departure, with 'a grand equipage, and without delay made formal pro-'posals to Mrs. Harris; offering to settle any part of his 'vast estate, in whatever manner she pleased, on Amelia. 'These proposals the old lady had, without any delibe-'ration, accepted; and had insisted, in the most violent 'manner, on her daughter's compliance: which Ame-'lia had as peremptorily refused to give; insisting, on 'her part, on the consent which her mother had before 'given to our marriage, in which she was heartily se-'conded by the doctor; who declared to her, as he now 'did to me, that we ought as much to be esteemed man 'and wife, as if the ceremony had already passed be-'tween us.

'These remonstrances, the doctor told me, had work-'ed no effect on Mrs. Harris, who still persisted in her 'avowed resolution of marrying her daughter to 'Winckworth, whom the doctor had likewise attacked;

'telling him, that he was paying his addreſſes to another 'man's wife: but all to no purpoſe; the young gentle-'man was too much in love to hearken to any diſſua-'ſives.

'We now entered into a conſultation what means to 'employ. The doctor earneſtly proteſted againſt any 'violence to be offered to the perſon of Winckworth; 'which, I believe, I had raſhly threatened; declaring, 'that if I made any attempt of that kind, he would 'for ever abandon my cauſe. I made him a ſolemn 'promiſe of forbearance. At laſt, he determined to 'pay another viſit to Mrs. Harris, and if he found her 'obdurate, he ſaid he thought himſelf at liberty to join 'us together without any farther conſent of the mother; 'which every parent, he ſaid, had a right to refuſe, but 'not retract when given, unleſs the party himſelf, by 'ſome conduct of his, gave a reaſon.

'The doctor having made his viſit with no better 'ſucceſs than before, the matter now debated was, how 'to get poſſeſſion of Amelia by ſtratagem; for ſhe was 'now a cloſer priſoner than ever, was her mother's bed-'fellow by night, and never out of her ſight by day.

'While we were deliberating on this point, a wine-'merchant of the town came to viſit the doctor, to in-'form him that he had juſt bottled off a hogſhead of ex-'cellent old Port, of which he offered to ſpare him a 'hamper; ſaying, that he was that day to ſend in twelve 'dozen to Mrs. Harris.

'The doctor now ſmiled at a conceit which came 'into his head; and taking me aſide, aſked me if I had 'love enough for the young lady to venture into the 'houſe in a hamper. I joyfully leaped at the propoſal, 'to which the merchant at the doctor's interceſſion, 'conſented: for I believe, Madam, you know the great 'authority which that worthy man had over the whole 'town. The doctor, moreover, promiſed to procure a 'licence, and to perform the office for us at his houſe, 'if I could find any means of conveying Amelia 'thither.

'In

'In this hamper, then, I was carried to the houſe, 'and depoſited in the entry; where I had not lain long 'before I was again removed, and packed up in a cart, 'in order to be ſent five miles into the country: for I 'heard the orders given as I lay in the entry; and there 'I likewiſe heard that Amelia and her mother were to 'follow me the next morning.

'I was unloaded from my cart, and ſet down, with 'the reſt of the lumber, in a great hall. Here I re-'mained above three hours, impatiently waiting for the 'evening, when I had determined to quit a poſture 'which was become very uneaſy, and break my priſon; 'but fortune contrived to releaſe me ſooner, by the fol-'lowing means. The houſe where I now was had been 'left in the care of one maid-ſervant. This faithful 'creature came into the hall with the footman who had 'driven the cart. A ſcene of the higheſt fondneſs ha-'ving paſſed between them, the fellow propoſed, and 'the maid conſented, to open the hamper and drink a 'bottle together, which they agreed their miſtreſs would 'hardly miſs in ſuch a quantity. They preſently be-'gan to execute their purpoſe. They opened the ham-'per, and to their great ſurprize diſcovered the contents.

'I took an immediate advantage of the conſternation 'which appeared in the countenances of both the ſer-'vants, and had ſufficient preſence of mind to improve 'the knowledge of thoſe ſecrets to which I was privy. 'I told them, that it entirely depended on their beha-'viour to me whether their miſtreſs ſhould ever be ac-'quainted, either with what they had done, or with what 'they had intended to do: for that if they would keep 'my ſecret, I would reciprocally keep theirs. I then 'acquainted them with my purpoſe of lying concealed 'in the houſe, in order to watch an opportunity of ob-'taining a private interview with Amelia.

'In the ſituation in which theſe two delinquents 'ſtood, you may be aſſured it was not difficult for 'me to ſeal up their lips. In ſhort, they agreed to 'whatever I propoſed. I lay that evening in my dear

'Amelia's bed-chamber, and was in the morning con-
'veyed into an old lumber-garret, where I was to wait
'till Amelia (whom the maid promised, on her arrival,
'to inform of my place of concealment) could find some
'opportunity of seeing me.'

'I ask pardon for interrupting you,' cried Miss Mat-
'thews, 'but you bring to my remembrance a foolish
'story which I heard at that time, though at a great
'distance from you: that an officer had, in confederacy
'with Miss Harris, broke open her mother's cellar,
'and stole away a great quantity of her wine. I men-
'tion it only to shew you what sort of foundations most
'stories have.'

Booth told her he had heard some such thing himself; and then continued his story, as in the next chapter.

CHAP. VI.

Containing many surprising Adventures.

'HERE,' continued he, 'I remained the whole day
'in hopes of a happiness, the expected approach
'of which gave me such delight, that I would not have
'exchanged my poor lodgings for the finest palace in the
'universe.

'A little after it was dark, Mrs. Harris arrived, to-
'gether with Amelia and her sister. I cannot express
'how much my heart now began to flutter; for as my
'hopes every moment increased, strange fears which I
'had not felt before began now to intermingle with
'them.

'When I had continued full two hours in these cir-
'cumstances, I heard a woman's step tripping up stairs,
'which I fondly hoped was my Amelia; but all on a
'sudden the door flew open, and Mrs. Harris herself
'appeared at it, with a countenance pale as death, her
'whole body trembling, I suppose with anger. She
'fell upon me in the most bitter language. It is not
'necessary to repeat what she said; nor, indeed, can I, I
'was so shocked and confounded on this occasion.
'In a word, the scene ended with my departing without
'seeing Amelia.'

'And

'And pray,' cries Miſs Matthews, how happened 'this unfortunate diſcovery?'

Booth anſwered, that----'The lady, at ſupper, ordered a bottle of wine, which neither myſelf,' ſaid he, 'nor the ſervants, had preſence of mind to provide. 'Being told there was none in the houſe, though ſhe had 'been before informed that the things came all ſafe, ſhe 'had ſent for the maid; who, being unable to deviſe 'any excuſe, had fallen on her knees, and after confeſ'ſing her deſign of opening a bottle, which ſhe imputed 'to the fellow, betrayed poor me to her miſtreſs.

'Well, Madam, after a lecture of about a quarter of 'an hour's duration, from Mrs. Harris, I ſuffered her 'to conduct me to the outer gate of her court-yard, 'whence I ſet forward, in a diſconſolate condition of 'mind, towards my lodgings. I had five miles to walk 'in a dark and rainy night; but how can I mention 'theſe trifling circumſtances, as any aggravation of my 'diſappointment?'

'How was it poſſible,' cries Miſs Matthews, 'that 'you could be got out of the houſe without ſeeing Miſs 'Harris?'

'I aſſure you, Madam,' anſwered Booth, 'I have 'often wondered at it myſelf; but my ſpirits were ſo 'much ſunk at the ſight of her mother, that no man was 'was ever a greater coward than I was at that inſtant. 'Indeed, I believe my tender concern for the terrors of 'Amelia were the principal cauſe of my ſubmiſſion. 'However it was, I left the houſe, and walked about 'an hundred yards; when, at the corner of the garden 'wall, a female voice, in a whiſper, cried out---"Mr. "Booth!" The perſon was extremely near me, but it 'was ſo dark, I could ſcarce ſee her; nor did I, in the 'confuſion I was in, immediately recognize the voice. 'I anſwered in a line of Congreve's, which burſt from 'my lips ſpontaneouſly; for I am ſure I had no inten'tion to quote plays at that time---

"Who calls that wretched thing that was Alphonſo?"

'Upon which a woman leapt into my arms, crying--- "O, it is, indeed, my Alphonſo, my only Alphonſo!" 'O, Miſs Matthews! gueſs what I felt, when I found 'I had my Amelia in my arms! I embraced her with an 'extacy not to be deſcribed, at the ſame inſtant pouring a 'thouſand tenderneſſes into her ears; at leaſt, if I could 'expreſs ſo many to her in a minute; for in that time 'the alarm began at the houſe. Mrs. Harris had miſſed 'her daughter, and the court was preſently full of lights 'and noiſes of all kinds.

'I now lifted Amelia over a gate, and jumping after, 'we crept along together by the ſide of a hedge, a dif- 'ferent way from what led to the town, as I imagined 'that would be the road through which they would pur- 'ſue us. In this opinion I was right; for we heard 'them paſs along that road, and the voice of Mrs. 'Harris herſelf, who ran with the reſt, notwithſtanding 'the darkneſs and the rain. By theſe means we luckily 'made our eſcape; and clambering over hedge and 'ditch, my Amelia performing the part of a heroine all 'the way, we at length arrived at a little green lane, 'where ſtood a vaſt ſpreading oak, under which we ſhel- 'tered ourſelves from a violent ſtorm.

'When this was over, and the moon began to ap- 'pear, Amelia declared ſhe knew very well where ſhe 'was; and a little farther, ſtriking into another lane, to 'the right, ſhe ſaid, that would lead us to a houſe where 'we ſhould be both ſafe and unſuſpected. I followed 'her directions, and we at length came to a little cot- 'tage, about three miles diſtant from Mrs. Harris's 'houſe.

'As it now rained very violently, we entered this 'cottage, in which we eſpied a light, without any ce- 'remony. Here we found an elderly woman ſitting by 'herſelf, at a little fire; who had no ſooner viewed us, 'than ſhe inſtantly ſprung from her ſeat, and ſtarting 'back, gave the ſtrongeſt tokens of amazement: upon 'which Amelia ſaid---"Be not ſurprized, nurſe; though "you ſee me in a ſtrange pickle, I own." The old woman,

'after

'after having ſeveral times bleſſed herſelf, and expreſſed 'the moſt tender concern for the lady, who ſtood dripping before her, began to beſtir herſelf in making 'up the fire; at the ſame entreating Amelia, that ſhe 'might be permitted to furniſh her with ſome cloaths, 'which,' ſhe ſaid, though not fine, were clean and 'wholeſome, and much drier than her own. I ſeconded 'this motion ſo vehemently, that Amelia, though ſhe 'declared herſelf under no apprehenſion of catching cold, '(ſhe hath, indeed, the beſt conſtitution in the world) 'at laſt conſented, and I retired without doors, under a 'ſhed, to give my angel an opportunity of dreſſing herſelf in the only room which the cottage afforded below 'ſtairs.

'At my return into the room, Amelia inſiſted on my 'changing my coat, for one which belonged to the old 'woman's ſon.'---'I am very glad,' cried Miſs Matthews, 'to find ſhe did not forget you. I own, I 'thought it ſomewhat cruel to turn you out into the 'rain.'---'O, Miſs Matthews,' continued he, taking no notice of her obſervation, 'I had now an opportunity 'of contemplating the vaſt power of exquiſite beauty, 'which nothing almoſt can add to or diminiſh. Amelia, 'in the poor rags of her old nurſe, looked ſcarce leſs 'beautiful than I have ſeen her appear at a ball, or an 'aſſembly.'---'Well, well,' cries Miſs Matthews, 'to 'be ſure ſhe did: but, pray go on with your ſtory.'

'The old woman,' continued he, 'after having 'equipped us as well as ſhe could, and placed our wet 'cloaths before the fire, began to grow inquiſitive; 'and after ſome ejaculations, ſhe cried---"O my dear "young madam, my mind miſgives me hugeouſly! And "pray, who is this fine young gentleman? Oh, Miſs "Emmy, Miſs Emmy, I am afraid Madam knows no"thing of all this matter."---"Suppoſe he ſhould be "my huſband, nurſe," anſwered Amelia. "Oh, good! "and if he be," replies the nurſe, "I hope he is "ſome great gentleman or other, with a vaſt eſtate, and "a coach and ſix: for to be ſure, if an he was the

"greateſt

" greatest lord in the land, you would deserve it all."
' But why do I attempt to mimick the honest creature!
' In short, she discovered the greatest affection for Ame-
' lia; with which I was much more delighted, than I
' was offended at the suspicions she shewed of me, or
' the many bitter curses which she denounced against
' me, if I ever proved a bad husband to so sweet a young
' lady.

' I so well improved the hint given me by Amelia,
' that the old woman had no doubt of our being really
' married; and comforting herself, that if I was not as
' well as it might have been, yet Madam had enough
' for us both, and that happiness did not always depend
' on great riches, she began to rail at the old lady for
' turning us out of doors, which I scarce told an untruth
' in asserting. And when Amelia said, she hoped her
' nurse would not betray her, the good woman answered
' with much warmth---" Betray you, my dear young
" madam! No, that I would not, if the king would
" give me all that he is worth. No, not if Madam
" herself would give me the great house, and the whole
" farm belonging to it."

' The good woman then went out, and fetched a
' chicken from the roost, which she killed, and began to
' pick, without asking any questions. Then summon-
' ing her son, who was in bed, to her assistance, she be-
' gan to prepare the chicken for our supper. This she
' afterwards set before us in so neat, I may almost say
' elegant, a manner, that whoever would have disdained
' it, either doth not know the sensation of hunger, or
' doth not deserve to have it gratified. Our food was
' attended with some ale, which our kind hostess said she
' intended not to have tapped till Christmas: " But,"
' added she, " I little thought ever to have the honour of
" seeing my dear honoured lady in this poor place."

' For my own part, no human being was then an ob-
' ject of envy to me; and even Amelia seemed to be in
' pretty good spirits; she softly whispered to me, that
' she perceived there might be happiness in a cottage.'

' A cot-

'A cottage!' cries Miſs Matthews, ſighing, 'a cot-'tage, with a man one loves, is a palace.'

'When ſupper was ended,' continued Booth, 'the 'good woman began to think of our farther wants, and 'very earneſtly recommended her bed to us; ſaying, it 'was a very neat, though homely one, and that ſhe 'could furniſh us with a pair of clean ſheets. She added 'ſome perſuaſives which painted my angel all over with 'vermilion. As for myſelf, I behaved ſo aukwardly 'and fooliſhly, and ſo readily agreed to Amelia's reſo-'lution of ſitting up all night, that if it did not give 'the nurſe any ſuſpicion of our marriage, it ought to 'have inſpired her with the utmoſt contempt for me.

'We both endeavoured to prevail with nurſe to re-'tire to her own bed, but found it utterly impoſſible to 'ſucceed: ſhe thanked Heaven ſhe underſtood breeding 'better than that. And ſo well bred was the good 'woman, that we could ſcarce get her out of the room 'the whole night. Luckily, for us, we both underſtood 'French; by means of which we conſulted together, 'even in her preſence, upon the meaſures we were to 'take in our preſent exigency. At length it was re-'ſolved I ſhould ſend a letter by this young lad, whom 'I have juſt before mentioned, to our worthy friend the 'doctor, deſiring his company at our hut, ſince we 'thought it utterly unſafe to venture to the town, which 'we knew would be in an uproar on our account before 'the morning.'

Here Booth made a full ſtop, ſmiled, and then ſaid, he was going to mention ſo ridiculous a diſtreſs, that he could ſcarce think of it without laughing. What this was, the reader ſhall know in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

The Story of Booth continued. More ſurprizing Adventures.

'FROM what trifles, dear Miſs Matthews,' cried Booth, 'may ſome of our greateſt diſtreſſes 'ariſe! Do you not perceive I am going to tell you we 'had neither pen, ink, nor paper, in our preſent exi-'gency?

'A ver-

'A verbal message was now our only resource: however, we contrived to deliver it in such terms, that neither nurse nor her son could possibly conceive any suspicion from it of the present situation of our affairs. Indeed, Amelia whispered me, I might safely place any degree of confidence in the lad; for he had been her foster-brother, and she had a great opinion of his integrity. He was in truth a boy of very good natural parts; and Dr. Harrison, who had received him into his family at Amelia's recommendation, had bred him up to write and read very well, and had taken some pains to infuse into him the principles of honesty and religion. He was not, indeed, even now discharged from the doctor's service; but had been at home with his mother for some time, on account of the small-pox, from which he was lately recovered.

'I have said so much,' continued Booth, 'of the boy's character, that you may not be surprized at some stories which I shall tell you of him hereafter.

'I am going now, Madam, to relate to you one of those strange accidents, which are produced by such a train of circumstances, that mere chance hath been thought incapable of bringing them together; and which have therefore given birth, in superstitious minds, to Fortune, and to several other imaginary beings.

'We were now impatiently expecting the arrival of the doctor: our messenger had been gone much more than a sufficient time; which to us, you may be assured, appeared not at all shorter than it was; when nurse, who had gone out of doors on some errand, came running hastily to us, crying out---" O my dear young Madam, her ladyship's coach is just at the door!" Amelia turned pale as death at these words: indeed, I feared she would have fainted, if I could be said to fear, who had scarce any of my senses left, and was in a condition little better than my angel's.

'While we were both in this dreadful situation, Amelia fallen back in her chair, with the countenance in which ghosts are painted, myself at her feet

'with

'with a complexion of no very different colour, and 'nurse screaming out, and throwing water in Amelia's 'face, Mrs. Harris entered the room. At the sight of 'this scene, she threw herself likewise into a chair, and 'called immediately for a glass of water, which Miss 'Betty, her daughter, supplied her with: for, as to 'nurse, nothing was capable of making any impression 'on her, whilst she apprehended her young mistress to 'be in danger.

'The doctor had now entered the room; and coming 'immediately up to Amelia, after some expressions of 'surprize, he took her by the hand, called her his little 'sugar-plum, and assured her there were none but 'friends present. He then led her tottering across the 'room to Mrs. Harris. Amelia then fell upon her 'knees before her mother; but the doctor caught her 'up, saying---" Use that posture, child, only to the " Almighty." But I need not mention this singularity 'of his to you, who know him so well, and must have 'heard him often dispute against addressing ourselves to 'man in the humblest posture which we use towards the 'Supreme Being.

'I will tire you with no more particulars: we were 'soon satisfied that the doctor had reconciled us and our 'affairs to Mrs. Harris; and we now proceeded directly 'to church, the doctor having before provided a licence 'for us.'

'But where is the strange accident?' cried Miss Matthews. 'Sure you raised more curiosity than you have 'have satisfied.'

'Indeed, Madam,' answered he, 'your reproof is 'just; I had like to have forgotten it: but you cannot 'wonder at me, when you reflect on that interesting part 'of my story which I am now relating. But before I 'mention this accident, I must tell you what happened 'after Amelia's escape from her mother's house. Mrs. 'Harris at first ran out into the lane among her servants, 'and pursued us (so she imagined) along the road lead'ing to the town; but that being very dirty, and a vio-

'lent ſtorm of rain coming, ſhe took ſhelter in an ale-'houſe about half a mile from her own houſe, whither 'ſhe ſent for her coach: ſhe then drove, together with 'her daughter, to town, where, ſoon after her arrival, 'ſhe ſent for the doctor, her uſual privy-counſelor in all 'her affairs. They ſat up all night together, the doc-'tor endeavouring, by arguments and perſuaſions, to 'bring Mrs. Harris to reaſon; but all to no purpoſe, 'though, as he hath informed me, Miſs Betty ſeconded 'him with the warmeſt entreaties.'

Here Miſs Matthews laughed; of which Booth beg-ged to know the reaſon: ſhe, at laſt, after many apo-logies, ſaid, it was the firſt good thing ſhe ever heard of Miſs Betty. 'Nay,' ſaid ſhe, 'and aſking your par-'don for my opinion of your ſiſter, ſince you will have 'it, I always conceived her to be the deepeſt of hypo-'crites.'

Booth fetched a ſigh, and ſaid, he was afraid ſhe had not always acted ſo kindly!---and then, after a little he-ſitation, proceeded.

'You will be pleaſed, Madam, to remember, the lad 'was ſent with a verbal meſſage to the doctor; which 'meſſage was no more than to acquaint him where we 'were, and to deſire the favour of his company, or that 'he would ſend a coach to bring us to whatever place he 'would pleaſe to meet us at. This meſſage was to be 'delivered to the doctor himſelf; and the meſſenger was 'ordered, if he found him not at home, to go to him 'wherever he was. He fulfilled his orders, and told it 'to the doctor in the preſence of Mrs. Harris.'

'Oh! the idiot!' cries Miſs Matthews. 'Not at 'all,' anſwered Booth: 'he is a very ſenſible fellow, as 'you will perhaps ſay hereafter. He had not the leaſt 'reaſon to ſuſpect that any ſecreſy was neceſſary, for we 'took the utmoſt care he ſhould not ſuſpect it. Well, 'Madam, this accident, which appeared ſo unfortu-'nate, turned in the higheſt degree to our advantage. 'Mrs. Harris no ſooner heard the meſſage delivered, than 'ſhe fell into the moſt violent paſſion imaginable, and

'accused the doctor of being in the plot, and having 'confederated with me in the design of carrying off her 'daughter.

'The doctor, who had hitherto used only soothing me-'thods, now talked in a different strain. He confessed 'the accusation, and justified his conduct. He said he 'was no meddler in the family affairs of others, nor should 'he have concerned himself with hers, but at her own 'request; but that since Mrs. Harris herself had made 'him an agent in this matter, he would take care to ac-'quit himself with honour, and above all things to pre-'serve a young lady for whom he had the highest esteem: "For she is," cries he, (and by Heavens he said true!) "the most worthy, generous, and noble, of all human "beings. You have yourself, Madam," said he, "con-"sented to the match. I have, at your request, made "the match;-----and then he added some particu-'lars relating to his opinion of me, which my modesty 'forbids me to repeat.'---'Nay, but,' cries Miss Mat-thews, 'I insist on your conquest of that modesty for 'once. We women do not love to hear one another's 'praises, and I will be made amends by hearing the 'praises of a man, and of a man whom, perhaps,' added she with a leer, 'I shall not think much the better of up-'on that account.'---'In obedience to your commands, 'then, Madam,' continued he, the doctor was so kind as 'to say, he had enquired into my character, and had 'found that I had been a dutiful son, and an affectionate 'brother. "Relations," said he, "in which, whoever "discharges his duty well, gives a well-grounded hope, "that he will behave as properly in all the rest." He 'concluded with saying, that Amelia's happiness, her 'heart, nay, her very reputation, were all concerned in 'this matter; to which, as he had been made instru-'mental, he was resolved to carry her through it: and 'then taking the licence from his pocket, declared to 'Mrs. Harris, that he would go that instant, and 'marry her daughter wherever he found her. This 'speech, the doctor's voice, his look, and his beha-

'viour, all which are sufficiently calculated to inspire 'awe, and even terror, when he pleases, frightened poor 'Mrs. Harris, and wrought a more sensible effect than 'it was in his power to produce by all his arguments 'and entreaties: and I have already related what fol-'lowed.

'Thus the strange accident of our wanting pen, ink, 'and paper, and our not trusting the boy with our se-'cret, occasioned the discovery to Mrs. Harris. That 'discovery put the doctor upon his mettle, and produced 'that blessed event which I have recounted to you, and 'which, as my mother hath since confessed, nothing but 'the spirit which he had exerted after the discovery, 'could have brought about.

'Well, Madam, you now see me married to Amelia; 'in which situation you will, perhaps, think my happi-'ness incapable of addition. Perhaps it was so; and 'yet I can with truth say, that the love which I then 'bore Amelia was not comparable to what I bear her 'now.'---'Happy Amelia!' cried Miss Matthews. 'If all men were like you, all women would be blessed: 'nay, the whole world would be so in a great measure; 'for, upon my soul, I believe, that from the damned 'inconstancy of your sex to ours proceed half the mise-'ries of mankind.'

That we may give the reader leisure to consider well the foregoing sentiment, we will here put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

In which our Readers will probably be divided in their Opinion of Mr. Booth's Conduct.

BOOTH proceeded as follows---'The first months of 'our marriage produced nothing remarkable enough 'to mention. I am sure, I need not tell Miss Mat-'thews, that I found in my Amelia every perfection of 'human nature. Mrs. Harris at first gave us some lit-'tle uneasiness. She had rather yielded to the doctor, 'than given a willing consent to the match; however, 'by degrees she became more and more satisfied, and at

'last

'last seemed perfectly reconciled. This we ascribed a 'good deal to the kind offices of Miss Betty, who had 'always appeared to be my friend. She had been 'greatly assisting to Amelia in making her escape, which 'I had no opportunity of mentioning to you before; 'and in all things behaved so well, outwardly at least, 'to myself as well as her sister, that we regarded her as 'our sincerest friend.

'About half a year after our marriage, two addi-'tional companies were added to our regiment, in one 'of which I was preferred to the command of a lieute-'nant. Upon this occasion, Miss Betty gave the first 'intimation of a disposition which we have since too se-'verely experienced.'

'Your servant, Sir,' says Miss Matthews; 'then I 'find I was not mistaken in my opinion of the lady. 'No; no; shew me any goodness in a censorious prude, 'and---'

As Miss Matthews hesitated for a simile, or an exe-cration, Booth proceeded---'You will please to remem-'ber, Madam, there was formerly an agreement be-'tween myself and Mrs. Harris, that I should settle all 'my Amelia's fortune on her, except a certain sum, 'which was to be laid out in my advancement in the 'army; but as our marriage was carried on in the 'manner you have heard, no such agreement was ever 'executed. And since I was become Amelia's hus-'band, not a word of the matter was ever mentioned by 'the old lady; and, as for myself, I declare I had not 'yet awakened from that delicious dream of bliss in 'which the possession of Amelia had lulled me.'

Here Miss Matthews sighed, and cast the tenderest looks on Booth, who thus continued his story.

'Soon after my promotion, Mrs. Harris one morn-'ing took an occasion to speak to me on this affair. She 'said, that as I had been promoted gratis to a lieute-'nancy, she would assist me with money to carry me 'yet a step higher: and if more was required than was 'formerly mentioned, it should not be wanting, since

'she was so perfectly satisfied with my behaviour to her 'daughter. Adding, that she hoped I had still the 'same inclination to settle on my wife the remainder of 'her fortune.

'I answered with very warm acknowledgments of 'my mother's goodness; and declared, if I had the 'world, I was ready to lay it at my Amelia's feet. 'And so, Heaven knows, I would ten thousand worlds.

'Mrs. Harris seemed pleased with the warmth of my 'sentiments, and said, she would immediately send to 'her lawyer, and give him the necessary orders; and 'thus ended our conversation on this subject.

'From this time there was a very visible altera-'tion in Miss Betty's behaviour. She grew reserved 'to her sister as well as to me. She was fretful and 'captious on the slightest occasion; nay, she affected 'much to talk on the ill consequences of an imprudent 'marriage, especially before her mother; and if ever 'any little tenderness or endearments escaped me in pub-'lic towards Amelia, she never failed to make some 'malicious remark on the short duration of violent pas-'sions; and when I have expressed a fond sentiment for 'my wife, her sister would kindly wish she might hear 'as much seven years hence.

'All these matters have been since suggested to us by 'reflection: for while they actually passed, both Amelia 'and myself had our thoughts too happily engaged to 'take notice of what discovered itself in the mind of 'any other person.

'Unfortunately for us, Mrs. Harris's lawyer hap-'pened at this time to be at London, where business 'detained him upwards of a month; and as Mrs. 'Harris would on no occasion employ any other, our 'affair was under an entire suspension till his return.

'Amelia, who was now big with child, had often 'expressed the deepest concern at her apprehensions of 'my being some time commanded abroad; a circum-'stance which, she declared, if it should ever happen to 'her, even though she should not then be in the same si-

tuation

'tuation as at present, would infallibly break her heart.' These remonstrances were made with such tenderness, 'and so much affected me, that to avoid any probability of such an event, I endeavoured to get an exchange into the horse-guards, a body of troops which 'very rarely goes abroad, unless where the king himself 'commands in person. I soon found an officer for my 'purpose; the terms were agreed on, and Mrs. Harris had ordered the money which I was to pay to be 'ready, notwithstanding the opposition made by Miss 'Betty, who openly dissuaded her mother from it; alledging that the exchange was highly to my disadvantage; that I could never hope to rise in the army after it; not forgetting, at the same time, some insinuations very prejudicial to my reputation as a soldier.

'When every thing was agreed on, and the two 'commissions were actually made out, but not signed 'by the king; one day, at my return from hunting, 'Amelia flew to me, and eagerly embracing me, cried 'out---" O Billy, I have news for you, which delights "my soul. Nothing sure was ever so fortunate as the "exchange you have made. The regiment you was "formerly in is ordered for Gibraltar."

'I received this news with far less transport than it 'was delivered. I answered coldly, since the case was 'so, I heartily hoped the commissions might be both 'signed. " What do you say!" replied Amelia eagerly; " sure you told me every thing was entirely "settled. That look of yours frightens me to death." 'But I am running into too minute particulars. In 'short, I received a letter by that very post, from the 'officer with whom I had exchanged, insisting, that 'though his majesty had not signed the commissions, 'that still the bargain was valid, partly urging it as a 'right, and partly desiring it as a favour, that he 'might go to Gibraltar in my room.

'This letter convinced me in every point. I was 'now informed that the commissions were not signed,

'and consequently that the exchange was not com-
'pleated. Of consequence the other could have no
'right to insist on going; and as for granting him such
'a favour, I too clearly saw I must do it at the expence
'of my honour. I was now reduced to a dilemma, the
'most dreadful which I think any man can experience,
'in which I am not ashamed to own, I found Love was
'not so over-matched by Honour as he ought to have
'been. The thoughts of leaving Amelia, in her pre-
'sent condition, to misery, perhaps to death or mad-
'ness, were insupportable; nor could any other consi-
'deration but that which now tormented me on the
'other side, have combated them a moment.'

'No woman upon earth,' cries Miss Matthews, 'can
'despise want of spirit in a man more than myself; and
'yet I cannot help thinking you was rather too nice on
'this occasion.'

'You will allow, Madam,' answered Booth, 'that
'whoever offends against the laws of honour in the least
'instance is treated as the highest delinquent. Here is
'no excuse, no pardon; and he doth nothing who
'leaves any thing undone. But if the conflict was so
'terrible with myself alone, what was my situation in
'the presence of Amelia! how could I support her
'sighs, her tears, her agonies, her despair? Could I
'bear to think myself the cruel cause of her sufferings,
'for so I was! Could I endure the thought of having
'it in my power to give her instant relief, for so it
'was, and refuse it her!

'Miss Betty was now again become my friend. She
'had scarce been civil to me for a fortnight last past, yet
'now she commended me to the skies, and as severely
'blamed her sister, whom she arraigned of the most
'contemptible weakness, in preferring my safety to
'my honour; she said many ill-natured things on the
'occasion, which I shall not now repeat.

'In the midst of this hurricane, the good doctor
'came to dine with Mrs. Harris, and at my desire de-
'livered his opinion on the matter.'

Here Mr. Booth was interrupted in his narrative by the arrival of a perſon whom we ſhall introduce in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing a Scene of a different Kind from any of the preceding.

THE gentleman who now arrived was the keeper; or, if you pleaſe, (for ſo he pleaſed to call himſelf) the governor of the priſon.

He uſed ſo little ceremony at his approach, that the bolt, which was very ſlight on the inſide, gave way, and the door immediately flew open. He had no ſooner entered the room than he acquainted Miſs Matthews that he had brought her very good news, for which he demanded a bottle of wine as his due.

This demand being complied with, he acquainted Miſs Matthews that the wounded gentleman was not dead, nor was his wound thought to be mortal: that loſs of blood, and perhaps his fright, had occaſioned his fainting away: 'But I believe, Madam,' ſaid he, 'if you take the proper meaſures, you may be bailed 'to-morrow: I expect the lawyer here this evening, 'and if you put the buſineſs into his hands, I warrant 'it will be done. Money to be ſure muſt be parted 'with, that is to be ſure. People to be ſure will ex'pect to touch a little in ſuch caſes. For my own 'part, I never deſire to keep a priſoner longer than 'the law allows, not I; I always inform them they 'can be bailed as ſoon as I know it. I never make any 'bargain, not I; I always love to leave thoſe things 'to the gentlemen and ladies themſelves. I never ſuſ'pect gentlemen and ladies of wanting generoſity.'

Miſs Matthews made a very ſlight anſwer to all theſe friendly profeſſions. She ſaid, ſhe had done nothing ſhe repented of, and was indifferent as to the event. 'All I can ſay,' cries ſhe, 'is, that if the wretch is 'alive, there is no greater villain in life than himſelf.' And inſtead of mentioning any thing of the bail, ſhe begged the keeper to leave her again alone with Mr.

Booth. The keeper replied, 'Nay, Madam, perhaps
'it may be better to ſtay a little longer here, if you
'have not bail ready, than to buy them too dear. Be-
'ſides, a day or two hence, when the gentleman is paſt
'all danger of recovery, to be ſure ſome folks who
'would expect an extraordinary fee now, cannot ex-
'pect to touch any thing. And to be ſure you ſhall
'want nothing here. The beſt of all things are to be
'had here for money, both eatable and drinkable;
'though I ſay it, I ſhan't turn my back to any of the
'taverns for either eatables or *wind*. The captain
'there need not have been ſo ſhy of owning himſelf
'when he firſt came in; we have had captains and
'other great gentlemen here before now; and no ſhame
'to them, though I ſay it. Many a great gentleman
'is ſometimes found in places that don't become them
'half ſo well; let me tell them that, Captain Booth;
'let me tell them that!'

'I ſee, Sir,' anſwered Booth, a little diſcompoſed,
'that you are acquainted with my title as well as my
'name.'

'Aye, Sir,' cries the keeper, 'and I honour you
'the more for it. I love the gentlemen of the army.
'I was in the army myſelf formerly; in the Lord of
'Oxford's horſe. It is true I rode private; but I had
'money enough to have bought in quarter-maſter, when
'I took it into my head to marry; and my wife ſhe
'did not like that I ſhould continue a ſoldier, ſhe was
'all for a private life; and ſo I came to this buſineſs.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' anſwered Booth, 'you con-
'ſulted your wife's inclinations very notably; but
'pray, will you ſatisfy my curioſity in telling me how
'you became acquainted that I was in the army? for
'my dreſs, I think, could not betray me.'

'Betray!' replied the keeper, 'there is no betray-
'ing here, I hope; I am not a perſon to betray peo-
'ple. But you are ſo ſhy and peery, you would al-
'moſt make one ſuſpect there was more in the matter.
'And if there be, I promiſe you, you need not be afraid
'of

'of telling it me. You will excuse my giving you a 'hint; but the sooner the better, that's all. Others 'may be beforehand with you, and first come first 'served on these occasions, that's all. Informers are 'odious, there is no doubt of that, and that no one 'would care to be an informer if he could help it, be- 'cause of the ill usage they always receive from the 'mob: yet it is dangerous to trust too much; and 'when safety and a good part of the reward too are on 'one side, and the gallows on the other, I know which 'a wise man would chuse.'

'What the devil do you mean by all this?' cried Booth.

'No offence, I hope,' answered the keeper; 'I 'speak for your good; and if you have been upon the 'snaffling lay---you understand me, I am sure.'

'Not I,' answered Booth; 'upon my honour.'

'Nay, nay,' replied the keeper, with a contemptuous sneer, 'if you are so peery as that comes to, you 'must take the consequence. But for my part, I 'know I would not trust Robinson with two-pence un- 'told.'

'What do you mean?' cries Booth? 'Who is Robinson?'

'And you don't know Robinson!' answered the keeper with great emotion. To which Booth replying in the negative; the keeper, after some tokens of amazement, cried out, 'Well, captain, I must say, you are 'the best at it, of all the gentlemen I ever saw. How- 'ever, I will tell you this: the lawyer and Mr. Robin- 'son have been laying their heads together about you 'above half an hour this afternoon. I overheard them 'mention Captain Booth several times; and for my 'part I would not answer that Mr. Murphy is not now 'gone about the business; but if you will impeach any 'to me of the road, or any thing else, I will step away 'to his Worship Thrasher this instant, and I am sure 'I have interest enough with him to get you admitted 'an evidence.'

'And

'And so,' cries Booth, 'you really take me for an 'highwayman?'

'No offence, captain, I hope,' said the keeper: 'as times go, there are many worse men in the world 'than those. Gentlemen may be driven to distress; 'and when they are, I know no more genteeler way 'than the road. It hath been many a brave man's 'case, to my knowledge, and men of as much honour 'too as any in the world.'

'Well, Sir,' said Booth, 'I assure you I am not 'that gentleman of honour you imagine me.'

Miss Matthews, who had long understood the keeper no better than Mr. Booth, no sooner heard his meaning explained, than she was fired with greater indignation than the gentleman had expressed. 'How dare you, 'Sir,' said she to the keeper, 'insult a man of fashion, and 'who hath had the honour to bear his majesty's com-'mission in the army, as you yourself own you know? 'If his misfortunes have sent him hither, sure we have 'no laws that will protect such a fellow as you in in-'sulting him?'---'Fellow!' muttered the keeper: 'I 'would not advise you, Madam, to use such language 'to me.'---'Do you dare threaten me!' replied Miss Matthews in a rage: 'venture in the least instance to 'exceed your authority, with regard to me, and I will 'prosecute you with the utmost vengeance.'

A scene of very high altercation now ensued, till Booth interposed, and quieted the keeper, who was, perhaps, enough inclined to an accommodation; for, in truth, he waged unequal war. He was, besides, unwilling to incense Miss Matthews, whom he expected to be bailed out the next day, and who had more money left than he intended she should carry out of the prison with her; and as for any violent or unjustifiable methods, the lady had discovered much too great a spirit to be in danger of them. The governor, therefore, in a very gentle tone, declared, that if he had given any offence to the gentleman, he heartily asked his pardon; that if he had known him to be really a captain, he should not

have entertained any ſuch ſuſpicions; but that captain was a very common title in that place, and belonged to ſeveral gentlemen that had never been in the army, or at moſt had rid private like himſelf. 'To be ſure, captain,' ſaid he, 'as you yourſelf own, your dreſs is not 'very military;' (for he had on a plain fuſtian ſuit) 'and beſides, as the lawyer ſays, *noſcitur a ſoſir* is a very 'good rule. And I don't believe there is a greater 'raſcal upon earth than that ſame Robinſon that I was 'talking of. Nay, I aſſure you, I wiſh there may be 'no miſchief hatching againſt you. But if there is, I 'will do all I can with the lawyer to prevent it. To 'be ſure Mr. Murphy is one of the clevereſt men in the 'world at the law, that even his enemies muſt own; 'and as I recommend him to all the buſineſs I can, '(and it is not a little, to be ſure, that ariſes in this 'place) why one good turn deſerves another. And I 'may expect that he will not be concerned in any plot 'to ruin any friend of mine; at leaſt, when I deſire 'him not. I am ſure he could not be an honeſt man if 'he would.'

Booth was then ſatisfied that Mr. Robinſon, whom he did not yet know by name, was the gameſter who had won his money at play. And now Miſs Matthews, who had very impatiently borne this long interruption, prevailed on the keeper to withdraw. As ſoon as he was gone, Mr. Booth began to felicitate her upon the news of the wounded gentleman being in a fair likelihood of recovery. To which, after a ſhort ſilence, ſhe anſwered, 'There is ſomething, perhaps, 'which you will not eaſily gueſs, that makes your 'congratulations more agreeable to me than the firſt 'account I heard of the villain's having eſcaped the 'fate he deſerves: for I do aſſure you, at firſt, it did 'not make me amends for the interruption of my curi'oſity. Now, I hope, we ſhall be diſturbed no more, 'till you have finiſhed your whole ſtory.---You left 'off, I think, ſomewhere in the ſtruggle about leaving 'Amelia, the happy Amelia.'---'And can you call

'her

'her happy at such a period?' cries Booth. 'Happy! 'aye, happy in any situation,' answered Miss Matthews, 'with such a husband. I, at least, may 'well think so, who have experienced the very reverse 'of her fortune; but I was not born to be happy. I 'may say with the poet---

"The blackest ink of fate was sure my lot,
"And when fate writ my name, it made a blot."

'Nay, nay, dear Miss Matthews,' answered Booth, 'you must and shall banish such gloomy thoughts. 'Fate hath, I hope, many happy days in store for you.' ---'Do you believe it, Mr. Booth?' replied she; 'indeed you know the contrary---you must know---for 'you can't have forgot. No Amelia in the world can 'have quite obliterated---forgetfulness is not in our 'own power: if it was, indeed, I have reason to 'think---But I know not what I am saying.' Pray, 'do proceed in that story.'

Booth so immediately complied with this request, that it is possible he was pleased with it. To say the truth, if all which unwittingly dropt from Miss Matthews was put together, some conclusions might, it seems, be drawn from the whole, which could not convey a very agreeable idea to a constant husband. Booth therefore proceeded to relate what is written in the third book of this history.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

In which Mr. Booth resumes his Story.

'IF I am not mistaken, Madam,' continued Booth, 'I was just going to acquaint you with the doctor's opinion, when we were interrupted by the 'keeper.

'The doctor having heard counsel on both sides, 'that is to say, Mrs. Harris for my staying, and Miss 'Betty for my going, at last delivered his own senti-

'ments.

'ments. As for Amelia, ſhe ſat ſilent, drowned in 'her tears; nor was I myſelf in a much better 'ſituation.

"As the commiſſions are not ſigned," ſaid the doc- 'tor, "I think you may be ſaid to remain in your "former regiment; and therefore I think you ought "to go on this expedition: your duty to your king "and country, whoſe bread you have eaten, requires "it; and this is a duty of too high a nature to admit "the leaſt deficiency. Regard to your character like- "wiſe requires you to go; for the world, which might "juſtly blame your ſtaying at home, if the caſe was "even fairly ſtated, will not deal ſo honeſtly by you: "you muſt expect to have every circumſtance againſt "you heightened, and moſt of what makes for your "defence omitted; and thus you will be ſtigmatized as "a coward, without any palliation. As the malicious "diſpoſition of mankind is too well known, and the "cruel pleaſure which they take in deſtroying the re- "putations of others; the uſe we are to make of this "knowledge is to afford no handle to reproach; for, "bad as the world is, it ſeldom falls on any man who "hath not given ſome ſlight cauſe for cenſure, though "this, perhaps, is often aggravated ten thouſand fold; "and when we blame the malice of the aggravation, "we ought not to forget our own imprudence in giv- "ing the occaſion. Remember, my boy, your ho- "nour is at ſtake; and you know how nice the honour "of a ſoldier is in theſe caſes. This is a treaſure, "which he muſt be your enemy indeed who would at- "tempt to rob you of. Therefore you ought to con- "ſider every one as your enemy, who, by deſiring you "to ſtay, would rob you of your honour."

"Do you hear that, ſiſter?" cries Miſs Betty. "Yes, I do hear it," anſwered Amelia, with more 'ſpirit than I ever ſaw her exert before, "and would "preſerve his honour at the expence of my life. I "will preſerve it, if it ſhould be at that expence; and "ſince it is Dr. Harriſon's opinion that he ought to

"go, I give my conſent.---Go, my dear huſband!" 'cried ſhe, falling upon her knees; "may every angel of Heaven guard and preſerve you!"---I cannot 'repeat her words without being affected,' ſaid he, wiping his eyes; 'the excellence of that woman no 'words can paint: Miſs Matthews, ſhe hath every 'perfection in human nature.

'I will not tire you with the repetition of any more 'that paſſed on that occaſion; nor with the quarrel 'that enſued between Mrs. Harris and the doctor; for 'the old lady could not ſubmit to my leaving her 'daughter in her preſent condition. She fell ſeverely 'on the army, and curſed the day in which her daughter was married to a ſoldier, not ſparing the doctor 'for having had ſome ſhare in the match. I will omit 'likewiſe the tender ſcene which paſſed between Amelia and myſelf previous to my departure.'

'Indeed, I beg you would not,' cries Miſs Matthews; 'nothing delights me more than ſcenes of tenderneſs. I ſhould be glad to know, if poſſible, every 'ſyllable which was uttered on both ſides.'

'I will indulge you then,' cries Booth, 'as far as is 'in my power. Indeed, I believe I am able to recollect much the greateſt part; for the impreſſion is never to be effaced from my memory.'

He then proceeded as Miſs Matthews deſired; but leſt all our readers ſhould not be of her opinion, we will, according to our uſual cuſtom, endeavour to accommodate ourſelves to every taſte, and ſhall therefore place this ſcene in a chapter by itſelf, which we deſire all our readers who do not love, or who perhaps do not know the pleaſure of tenderneſs, to paſs over; ſince they may do this without any prejudice to the thread of the narrative.

CHAP. II.

Containing a ſcene of the tender kind.

'THE doctor, Madam,' continued Booth, 'ſpent his 'evening at Mrs. Harris's houſe, where I ſat with 'him whilſt he ſmoaked his pillow-pipe, as his phraſe 'is,

'is. Amelia was retired above half an hour to her 'chamber, before I went to her. At my entrance I 'found her on her knees; a posture in which I never 'disturbed her. In a few minutes she arose, came to 'me, and embracing me, said, she had been praying 'for resolution to support the cruelest moment she had 'ever undergone, or could possibly undergo. I remind- 'ed her how much more bitter a farewel would be on a 'death-bed, when we never could meet, in this world 'at least, again. I then endeavoured to lessen all those 'objects which alarmed her most, and particularly 'the danger I was to encounter; upon which head I 'seemed a little to comfort her. But the probable 'length of my absence, and the certain length of my 'voyage, were circumstances which no oratory of mine 'could even palliate. "Oh, Heavens!" said she, burst- 'ing into tears, "can I bear to think that hundreds, "thousands, for aught I know, of miles or leagues, "of lands and seas are between us! What is the pros- "pect from that mount in our garden where I have sat "so many happy hours with my Billy? what is the "distance between that and the farthest hill which we "see from thence, compared to the distance which will "be between us? You cannot wonder at this idea; you "must remember, my Billy, at this place, this very "thought came formerly into my forboding mind. I "then begged you to leave the army: why would you "not comply? Did I not tell you then, that the smallest "cottage we could survey from the mount, would be "with you a paradise to me: it would be so still; why "can't my Billy think so? Am I so much his superior "in love? Where is the dishonour, Billy? or if there be "any, will it reach our ears in our little hut? Are glory "and fame, and not his Amelia, the happiness of my "husband? Go then, purchase them at my expence. "You will pay a few sighs, perhaps a few tears at part- "ing, and then new scenes will drive away the thoughts "of poor Amelia from your bosom: but what assistance "shall I have in my affliction? Not that any change of "scene

"scene could drive you one moment from my remem-
"brance; yet here every object I behold will place your
"loved idea in the liveliest manner before my eyes. This
"is the bed in which you have reposed; that is the
"chair on which you have sat: upon these boards you
"have stood; these books you have read to me. Can I
"walk among our beds of flowers, without viewing
"your favourites? nay, those which you have planted
"with your own hands? Can I see one beauty from our
"beloved mount, which you have not pointed out to
"me?" Thus she went on; the woman, Madam, you
'see, still prevailing.'--'Since you mention it,' says Miss
Matthews with a smile, 'I own the same observation
'occurred to me. It is too natural to us to consider our-
'selves only, Mr. Booth.'---'You shall hear,' he cried.
'At last, the thoughts of her present condition suggested
'themselves. "But if," said she, "my situation, even
"in health, will be so intolerable, how shall I, in the
"danger and agonies of child-birth, support your ab-
"sence!" Here she stopped, and looking on me with all
'the tenderness imaginable, cried out, "And am I then
"such a wretch, to wish for your presence at such a sea-
"son! Ought I not to rejoice that you are out of the
"hearing of my cries, or the knowledge of my pains!
"If I die, will you not have escaped the horrors of a
"parting ten thousand times more dreadful than this!
"Go, go, my Billy! the very circumstance which made
"me most dread your departure, hath perfectly recon-
"ciled me to it. I perceive clearly now that I was only
"wishing to support my own weakness with your strength,
"and to relieve my own pains at the price of yours.
"Believe me, my love, I am ashamed of myself." I
'caught her in my arms with raptures not to be expressed
'in words, calling her my heroine; sure none ever better
'deserved that name; after which we remained for some
'time speechless, and locked in each others embraces.'
---'I am convinced,' said Miss Matthews with a sigh,
'there are moments in life worth purchasing with
'worlds.'

'At length the fatal morning came. I endeavoured to hide every pang of my heart, and to wear the utmoſt gaiety in my countenance. Amelia acted the ſame part. In theſe aſſumed characters we met the family at breakfaſt; at their breakfaſt, I mean, for we were both full already. The doctor had ſpent above an hour that morning in diſcourſe with Mrs. Harris, and had in ſome meaſure reconciled her to my departure. He now made uſe of every art to relieve the poor diſtreſſed Amelia; not by inveighing againſt the folly of grief, or by ſeriouſly adviſing her not to grieve; both which were ſufficiently performed by Miſs Betty. The doctor, on the contrary, had recourſe to every means which might caſt a veil over the idea of grief, and raiſe comfortable images in my angel's mind. He endeavoured to leſſen the ſuppoſed length of my abſence, by diſcourſing on matters which are more diſtant in time. He ſaid he intended next year to rebuild part of his parſonage-houſe; "and you, captain," ſays he, "ſhall "lay the corner ſtone, I promiſe you:" with many other inſtances of the like nature; which produced, I believe, ſome good effect on us both.

'Amelia ſpoke but little; indeed, more tears than words dropped from her: however, ſhe ſeemed reſolved to bear her affliction with reſignation. But when the dreadful news arrived, that the horſes were ready, and I, having taken my leave of all the reſt, at laſt approached her, ſhe was unable to ſupport the conflict with nature any longer; and clinging round my neck, ſhe cried, "Farewell, farewell for ever; for I ſhall never, "never, ſee you more!" At which words the blood entirely forſook her lovely cheeks, and ſhe became a lifeleſs corpſe in my arms.

'Amelia continued ſo long motionleſs, that the doctor, as well as Mrs. Harris, began to be under the moſt terrible apprehenſions: ſo they informed me afterwards; for at that time I was incapable of making any obſervation. I had indeed very little more uſe of my ſenſes than the dear creature whom I ſupported. At length, how-

'ever, we were all delivered from our fears; and life 'again visited the loveliest mansion that human nature 'ever afforded.

'I had been and yet was so terrified with what had 'happened, and Amelia continued yet so weak and ill, 'that I determined, whatever might be the consequence, 'not to leave her that day: which resolution she was no 'sooner acquainted with, than she fell on her knees, cry- 'ing, "Good heaven! I thank thee for this reprieve at "least. Oh! that every hour of my future life could be "crammed into this dear day!"

'Our good friend the doctor remained with us. He 'said, he had intended to visit a family in some affliction; "but I don't know," says he, "why I should ride a do- "zen miles after affliction, when we have enough here." 'Of all mankind the doctor is the best of comforters. 'As his excessive good-nature makes him take vast de- 'light in the office; so his deep penetration into the hu- 'man mind, joined to his great experience, renders him the 'most wonderful proficient in it; and he so well knows 'when to soothe, when to reason, and when to ridicule, 'that he never applies any of these arts improperly, which 'is almost universally the case with the physicians of the 'mind, and which it requires very great judgment and 'dexterity to avoid.

'The doctor principally applied himself to ridiculing 'the dangers of the siege, in which he succeeded so well, 'that he sometimes forced a smile even into the face of 'Amelia. But what most comforted her were the ar- 'guments to convince her of the probability of my speedy, 'if not immediate return. He said, the general opinion 'was, that the place would be taken before our arrival 'there: in which case, we should have nothing more to 'do, than to make the best of our way home again.

'Amelia was so lulled by these arts, that she passed 'the day much better than I expected. Though the 'doctor could not make pride strong enough to conquer 'love, yet he exalted the former to make some stand 'against the latter; insomuch, that my poor Amelia,

'I be-

‘I believe more than once, flattered herſelf, (to ſpeak
‘the language of the world) that her reaſon had
‘gained an entire victory over her paſſion; till Love
‘brought up a reinforcement, if I may uſe that term,
‘of tender ideas, and bore down all before him.

‘In the evening, the doctor and I paſſed another half
‘hour together, when he propoſed to me to endeavour to
‘leave Amelia aſleep in the morning, and promiſed me
‘to be at hand when ſhe awaked, and to ſupport her
‘with all the aſſiſtance in his power. He added, that
‘nothing was more fooliſh, than for friends to take leave
‘of each other. “It is true, indeeed,” ſays he, “in
“the common acquaintance and friendſhip of the world,
“this is a very harmleſs ceremony; but between two
“perſons who really love each other, the Church of
“Rome never invented a penance half ſo ſevere as this,
“which we abſurdly impoſe on ourſelves.”

‘I greatly approved the doctor's propoſal; thanked
‘him; and promiſed, if poſſible, to put it in execution.
‘He then ſhook me by the hand, and heartily wiſhed
‘me well: ſaying, in his blunt way---“Well, boy, I
“hope to ſee thee crowned with laurels at thy return.
“One comfort I have, at leaſt, that ſtone walls and a
“ſea will prevent thee from running away.”

‘When I had left the doctor, I repaired to my
‘Amelia, whom I found in her chamber, employed in
‘a very different manner from what ſhe had been the
‘preceding night; ſhe was buſy in packing up ſome
‘trinkets in a caſket, which ſhe deſired me to carry
‘with me. The caſket was her own work, and ſhe had
‘juſt faſtened it as I came to her.

‘Her eyes very plainly diſcovered what had paſſed
‘while ſhe was engaged in her work; however, her coun-
‘tenance was now ſerene, and ſhe ſpoke, at leaſt with
‘ſome chearfulneſs. But after ſome time, “You muſt
“take care of this caſket, Billy,” ſaid ſhe; “you muſt,
“indeed, Billy--- for---” Here paſſion almoſt choaked
‘her, till a flood of tears gave her relief, and then ſhe
‘proceeded---“for I ſhall be the happieſt woman that

"ever was born when I see it again."---I told her, 'with the blessing of God that day would soon come. "Soon!" answered she: "no, Billy, not soon; a week "is an age---but yet the happy day may come. It shall, "it must, it will! Yes, Billy, we shall meet never to "part again---even in this world, I hope."---Pardon 'my weakness, Miss Matthews; but, upon my soul! 'I cannot help it;' cried he, wiping his eyes. 'Well, 'I wonder at your patience, and I will try it no longer--- 'Amelia, tired out with so long a struggle between variety of passions, and having not closed her eyes during 'three successive nights, towards the morning fell into a 'profound sleep: in which sleep I left her---and having 'dressed myself with all the expedition imaginable, singing, whistling, hurrying, attempting by every method 'to banish thought, I mounted my horse, which I had 'over-night ordered to be ready, and galloped away 'from that house where all my treasure was deposited.'

'Thus, Madam, I have, in obedience to your commands, run through a scene, which, if it hath been 'tiresome to you, you must yet acquit me of having 'obtruded upon you. This I am convinced of, that 'no one is capable of tasting such a scene, who hath not 'a heart full of tenderness; and perhaps not even then, 'unless he hath been in the same situation.

CHAP. III.

In which Mr. Booth sets forward on his Journey.

'WELL, Madam, we have now taken our leave of 'Amelia. I rode a full mile before I once suffered myself to look back; but now being come to 'the top of a little hill, the last spot I knew which 'could give me a prospect of Mrs. Harris's house, my 'resolution failed; I stopped, and cast my eyes backward. Shall I tell you what I felt at that instant! I 'do assure you, I am not able. So many tender ideas 'crouded at once into my mind, that, if I may use the 'expression, they almost dissolved my heart. And 'now, Madam, the most unfortunate accident came 'first into my head. This was, that I had in the hurry

'and

‘ and confuſion left the dear caſket behind me. The
‘ thought of going back at firſt ſuggeſted itſelf; but
‘ the conſequences of that were too apparent. I there-
‘ fore reſolved to ſend my man, and in the mean time to
‘ ride on ſoftly on my road. He immediately executed
‘ my orders, and after ſome time feeding my eyes with
‘ that delicious, and yet heart-felt proſpect, I at laſt
‘ turned my horſe to deſcend the hill, and proceeded
‘ about a hundred yards, when, conſidering with my-
‘ ſelf, that I ſhould loſe no time by a ſecond indul-
‘ gence, I again turned back, and once more feaſted
‘ my ſight with the ſame painful pleaſure till my man
‘ returned, bringing me the caſket, and an account that
‘ Amelia ſtill continued in the ſweet ſleep I left her.
‘ I now ſuddenly turned my horſe for the laſt time, and
‘ with the utmoſt reſolution purſued my journey.

‘ I perceived my man at his return---But before I
‘ mention any thing of him, it may be proper, Ma-
‘ dam, to acquaint you who he was. He was the
‘ foſter-brother of my Amelia. This young fellow
‘ had taken it into his head to go into the army; and
‘ he was deſirous to ſerve under my command. The
‘ doctor conſented to diſcharge him; his mother at
‘ laſt yielded to his importunities; and I was very ea-
‘ ſily prevailed on to liſt one of the handſomeſt young
‘ fellows in England.

‘ You will eaſily believe I had ſome little partiality
‘ to a perſon any way related to my dear Amelia; but as
‘ he had never ſeen the regiment, I had no opportunity
‘ to ſhew him any great mark of favour. Indeed, he
‘ waited on me as my ſervant; and I treated him
‘ with all the tenderneſs which can be uſed to one in
‘ that ſtation.

‘ When I was about to change into the horſe-
‘ guards, the poor fellow began to droop, fearing that
‘ he ſhould no longer be in the ſame corps with me;
‘ though certainly that would not have been the caſe.
‘ However, he had never mentioned one word of his diſ-
‘ ſatisfaction. He is, indeed, a fellow of a noble ſpi-

‘ rit;

‘ rit; but when he heard I was to remain where I was,
‘ and that we were going to Gibraltar together, he
‘ fell into tranſports of joy little ſhort of madneſs. In
‘ ſhort, the poor fellow had imbibed a very ſtrong
‘ affection for me; though this was what I knew no-
‘ thing of till long after.

‘ When he returned to me, then, as I was ſaying,
‘ with the caſket, I obſerved his eyes all over blub-
‘ bered with tears. I rebuked him a little too raſhly
‘ on this occaſion. “ Heyday!” ſays I, “ what is
“ the meaning of this? I hope I have not a milk-ſop
“ with me. If I thought you would ſhew ſuch a face
“ to the enemy, I would leave you behind.”—
“ Your honour need not fear that,” anſwered he; “ I
“ ſhall find nobody there that I ſhall love well enough
“ to make me cry.” I was highly pleaſed with this an-
‘ ſwer, in which I thought I could diſcover both ſenſe
‘ and ſpirit. I then aſked him what had occaſioned thoſe
‘ tears ſince he had left me, (for he had no ſign of any
‘ at that time) and whether he had ſeen his mother at
‘ Mrs. Harris's. He anſwered in the negative, and
‘ begged that I would aſk him no more queſtions;
‘ adding, that he was not very apt to cry, and he
‘ hoped he ſhould never give me ſuch another opportu-
‘ nity of blaming him. I mention this only as an in-
‘ ſtance of his affection towards me; for I never could
‘ account for thoſe tears, any otherwiſe than by placing
‘ them to the account of that diſtreſs in which he had
‘ left me at that time. We travelled full forty miles
‘ that day, without baiting; when arriving at the inn
‘ where I intended to reſt that night, I retired imme-
‘ diately to my chamber, with my dear Amelia's caſ-
‘ ket, the opening of which was the niceſt repaſt, and
‘ to which every other hunger gave way.

‘ It is impoſſible to mention to you all the little
‘ matters with which Amelia had furniſhed this caſ-
‘ ket. It contained medicines of all kinds, which her
‘ mother, who was the Lady Bountiful of that coun-
‘ try, had ſupplied her with. The moſt valuable of

‘ all

'all to me was a lock of her dear hair, which I have 'from that time to this worn in my bosom. What 'would I have then given for a little picture of my dear 'angel, which she had lost from her chamber about a 'month before, and which we had the highest reason 'in the world to imagine her sister had taken away! 'for the suspicion lay only between her and Amelia's 'maid, who was of all creatures the honestest, and 'whom her mistress had often trusted with things of 'much greater value: for the picture, which was set 'in gold, and had two or three little diamonds 'round it, was worth about twelve guineas only; 'whereas Amelia left jewels in her care of much 'greater value.'

'Sure,' cries Miss Matthews, 'she could not be 'such a paltry pilferer?'

'Not on account of the gold or the jewels,' cries 'Booth. 'We imputed it to mere spite, with which 'I assure you she abounds; and she knew that next to 'Amelia herself, there was nothing which I valued so 'much as this little picture; for such a resemblance 'did it bear to the original, that Hogarth himself did 'never, I believe, draw a stronger likeness. Spite, 'therefore, was the only motive to this cruel depreda-'tion; and indeed her behaviour on the occasion suf-'ficiently convinced us both of the justice of our sus-'picion, though we neither of us durst accuse her; 'and she herself had the assurance to insist very strongly '(though she could not prevail) with Amelia to turn 'away her innocent maid, saying, she would not live 'in the house with a thief.'

Miss Matthews now discharged some curses on Miss Betty, not much worth repeating, and then Mr. Booth proceeded in his relation.

CHAP. IV.

A Sea-Piece.

'THE next day we joined the regiment, which was 'soon after to embark. Nothing but mirth and 'jollity were in the countenances of every other officer

'and

and ſoldier; and as I now met ſeveral friends whom I had not ſeen for above a year before, I paſſed ſeveral happy hours, in which poor Amelia's image ſeldom obtruded itſelf to interrupt my pleaſure. To confeſs the truth, dear Miſs Matthews, the tendereſt of paſſions is capable of ſubſiding; nor is abſence from our deareſt friends ſo inſupportable as it may at firſt appear. Diſtance of time and place do really cure what they ſeem to aggravate; and taking leave of our friends reſembles taking leave of the world; concerning which it hath been often ſaid, that it is not death, but dying, which is terrible.' Here Miſs Matthews burſt into a fit of laughter, and cried, 'I ſincerely aſk your pardon; but I cannot help laughing at the gravity of your philoſophy.' Booth anſwered, that the doctrine of the paſſions had been always his favourite ſtudy; that he was convinced every man acted entirely from that paſſion which was uppermoſt: 'Can I then think,' ſaid he, 'without entertaining the utmoſt contempt for myſelf, that any pleaſure upon earth could drive the thoughts of Amelia one inſtant from my mind!

'At length we embarked on board a tranſport, and ſailed for Gibraltar; but the wind, which was at firſt fair, ſoon chopped about; ſo that we were obliged, for ſeveral days, to beat to windward, as the ſea-phraſe is. During this time, the taſte which I had of a ſea-faring life did not appear extremely agreeable. We rolled up and down in a little narrow cabin, in which were three officers, all of us extremely ſea-ſick; our ſickneſs being much aggravated by the motion of the ſhip, by the view of each other, and by the ſtench of the men. But this was but a little taſte indeed of the miſery which was to follow: for we were got but about ſix leagues to the weſtward of Scilly, when a violent ſtorm aroſe at north-eaſt, which ſoon raiſed the waves to the height of mountains. The horror of this is not to be adequately deſcribed to thoſe who have never ſeen the like.

'The

'The ſtorm began in the evening, and as the clouds 'brought on the night apace, it was ſoon entirely dark; 'nor had we, during many hours, any other light than 'what was cauſed by the jarring elements, which fre- 'quently ſent forth flaſhes, or rather ſtreams of fire; 'and whilſt theſe preſented the moſt dreadful objects to 'our eyes, the roaring of the winds, and the daſhing of 'the waves againſt the ſhip and each other, formed a 'ſound altogether as horrible to our ears; while our 'ſhip, ſometimes lifted up as it were to the ſkies, and 'ſometimes ſwept away at once as into the loweſt 'abyſs, ſeemed to be the ſport of the winds and ſeas. 'The captain himſelf almoſt gave all for loſt, and ex- 'preſſed his apprehenſion of being inevitably caſt on 'the rocks of Scilly, and beat to pieces. And now, 'while ſome on board were addreſſing themſelves to 'the Supreme Being, and others applying for com- 'fort to ſtrong liquors, my whole thoughts were en- 'tirely engaged by my Amelia. A thouſand tender 'ideas crouded into my mind. I can truly ſay, that I 'had not a ſingle conſideration about myſelf, in which 'ſhe was not concerned. Dying, to me, was leaving 'her; and the fear of never ſeeing her more, was a 'dagger ſtuck in my heart. Again, all the terrors 'with which this ſtorm, if it reached her ears, muſt fill 'her gentle mind on my account, and the agonies which 'ſhe muſt undergo, when ſhe heard of my fate, gave me 'ſuch intolerable pangs, that I now repented my re- 'ſolution, and wiſhed, I own I wiſhed, that I had ta- 'ken her advice, and preferred love and a cottage to 'all the dazzling charms of honour.

'While I was tormenting myſelf with theſe medi- 'tations, and had concluded myſelf as certainly loſt, 'the maſter came into the cabin, and with a chearful 'voice aſſured us that we had eſcaped the danger, and 'that we had certainly paſſed to the weſtward of the rock. 'This was comfortable news to all preſent; and my 'captain, who had been ſome time on his knees, leapt 'ſuddenly up, and teſtified his joy with a great oath.

'A person unused to the sea would have been asto-
'nished at the satisfaction which now discovered itself
'in the master, or in any on board: for the storm still
'raged with great violence, and the day-light, which
'now appeared, presented us with sights of horror suf-
'ficient to terrify minds which were not absolute slaves
'to the passion of fear; but so great is the force of ha-
'bit, that what inspires a landman with the highest
'apprehensions of danger, gives not the least concern
'to a sailor, to whom rocks and quicksands are almost
'the only objects of terror.

'The master, however, was a little mistaken in the
'present instance; for he had not left the cabin above
'an hour, before my man came running to me, and ac-
'quainted me that the ship was half full of water; that
'the sailors were going to hoist out the boat and save
'themselves, and begged me to come that moment along
'with him, as I tendered my preservation. With
'this account, which was conveyed to me in a whisper, I
'acquainted both the captain and ensign; and we all
'together immediately mounted the deck, where we
'found the master making use of all his oratory to per-
'suade the sailors that the ship was in no danger; and
'at the same employed all his authority to set the
'pumps a-going, which he assured them would keep
'the water under, and save his dear Lovely Peggy,
'(for that was the name of the ship) which he swore
'he loved as dearly as his own soul.

'Indeed this sufficiently appeared; for the leak was
'so great, and the water flowed in so plentifully, that
'his Lovely Peggy was half filled before he could be
'brought to think of quitting her; but now the boat
'was brought along-side the ship; and the master
'himself, notwithstanding all his love for her, quitted
'his ship, and leaped into the boat. Every man present
'attempted to follow his example, when I heard the
'voice of my servant roaring forth my name in a kind of
'agony. I made directly to the ship's side, but was
'too late: for the boat, being already overladen, put di-

'rectly off. And now, Madam, I am going to relate 'to you an instance of heroic affection in a poor fel-'low towards his master, to which love itself, even 'among persons of superior education, can produce 'but few similar instances. My poor man being un-'able to get me with him into the boat, leaped sud-'denly into the sea, and swam back to the ship; and 'when I gently rebuked him for his rashness, he an-'swered, he chose rather to die with me, than to live 'to carry the account of my death to my Amelia; at 'the same time bursting into a flood of tears, he cried, "Good Heavens! what will that poor lady feel when "she hears of this!" This tender concern for my 'dear love, endeared the poor fellow more to me than 'the gallant instance which he had just before given of 'his affection towards myself.

'And now, Madam, my eyes were shocked with a 'sight, the horror of which can scarce be imagined: 'for the boat had scarce got four hundred yards from 'the ship, when it was swallowed up by the merciless 'waves, which now ran so high, that out of the num-'ber of persons which were in the boat, none recovered 'the ship; though many of them we saw miserably 'perish before our eyes, some of them very near us, 'without any possibility of giving them the least as-'sistance.

'But whatever we felt for them, we felt, I believe, 'more for ourselves, expecting every minute that we 'should share the same fate. Among the rest, one of our 'officers appeared quite stupified with fear. I never in-'deed saw a more miserable example of the great power 'of that passion: I must not, however, omit doing 'him justice, by saying, that I afterwards saw the 'same man behave well in an engagement, in which 'he was wounded. Though there, likewise, he was 'said to have betrayed the same passion of fear in his 'countenance.

'The other of our officers was no less stupified (if I 'may so express myself) with fool-hardiness, and

'seemed almost insensible of his danger. To say the 'truth, I have, from this, and some other instances 'which I have seen, been almost inclined to think, that 'the courage as well as cowardice of fools proceeds 'from not knowing what is or what is not the proper 'object of fear: indeed, we may account for the ex- 'treme hardiness of some men, in the same manner as 'for the terrors of children at a bugbear; the child 'knows not but that the bugbear is the proper object 'of fear, the blockhead knows not that a cannon-ball 'is so.

'As to the remaining part of the ship's crew, and 'the soldiery, most of them were dead drunk; and the 'rest were endeavouring, as fast as they could, to pre- 'pare for death in the same manner.

'In this dreadful situation we were taught, that no 'human condition should inspire men with absolute 'despair; for as the storm had ceased for some time, 'the swelling of the sea began considerably to abate; 'and we now perceived the man of war which convoyed 'us, at no great distance astern. Those aboard her 'easily perceived our distress, and made towards us. 'When they came pretty near, they hoisted out two 'boats to our assistance. These no sooner approached 'the ship, than they were instantaneously filled, and I 'myself got a place in one of them, chiefly by the aid 'of my honest servant, of whose fidelity to me on all 'occasions I cannot speak or think too highly. In- 'deed I got into the boat so much the more easily, as 'a great number on board the ship were rendered by 'drink incapable of taking any care for themselves. 'There was time, however, for the boat to pass and 'repass; so that when we came to call over names, 'three only, of all that remained in the ship after the 'loss of her own boat, were missing.

'The captain, ensign, and myself, were received 'with many congratulations by our officers on board 'the man of war. The sea-officers too, all except 'the captain, paid us their compliments, though these

'were of the rougher kind, and not without several 'jokes on our escape. As for the captain himself, we 'scarce saw him during many hours; and when he ap-'peared, he presented a view of majesty beyond any 'that I had ever seen. The dignity which he pre-'served did indeed give me rather the idea of a Mogul, 'or a Turkish emperor, than of any of the monarchs 'of Christendom. To say the truth, I could resemble 'his walk on the deck to nothing but to the image of 'Captain Gulliver strutting among the Lilliputians; 'he seemed to think himself a being of an order supe-'rior to all around him, and more especially to us of 'the land service. Nay, such was the behaviour of 'all the sea-officers and sailors to us and our soldiers, 'that instead of appearing to be subjects of the same 'prince, engaged in one quarrel, and joined to sup-'port one cause, we landmen rather seemed to be cap-'tives on board an enemy's vessel. This is a grievous 'misfortune, and often proves so fatal to the service, 'that it is great pity some means could not be found 'of curing it.'

Here Mr. Booth stopped a while, to take breath. We will therefore give the same refreshment to the reader.

CHAP. V.

The Arrival of Booth at Gibraltar, with what there befel him.

'THE adventures,' continued Booth, 'which hap-'pened to me from this day till my arrival at 'Gibraltar, are not worth recounting to you. After 'a voyage, the remainder of which was tolerably prof-'perous, we arrived in that garrison, the natural 'strength of which is so well known to the whole 'world.

'About a week after my arrival, it was my fortune 'to be ordered on a sally-party, in which my left-leg 'was broke with a musquet-ball; and I should most cer-'tainly have either perished miserably, or must have 'owed my preservation to some of the enemy, had not

'my faithful servant carried me off on his shoulders, 'and afterwards, with the assistance of one of his com'rades, brought me back into the garrison.

'The agony of my wound was so great, that it 'threw me into a fever, from whence my surgeon ap'prehended much danger. I now began again to feel for 'Amelia, and for myself on her account: and the dis'order of my mind occasioned by such melancholy con'templations, very highly aggravated the distemper of 'my body; insomuch, that it would probably have 'proved fatal, had it not been for the friendship of one 'Captain James, an officer of our regiment, and an old 'acquaintance, who is undoubtedly one of the plea'santest companions, and one of the best natured men 'in the world. This worthy man, who had a head 'and a heart perfectly adequate to every office of 'friendship, staid with me almost day and night during 'my illness; and by strengthening my hopes, raising 'my spirits, and chearing my thoughts, preserved me 'from destruction.

'The behaviour of this man alone is a sufficient 'proof of the truth of my doctrine, that all men act 'entirely from their passions; for Bob James can ne'ver be supposed to act from any motive of virtue and 'religion, since he constantly laughs at both; and yet 'his conduct towards me alone demonstrates a degree 'of goodness which, perhaps, few of the votaries of 'either virtue or religion can equal.'

'You need not take much pains,' answered Miss Matthews with a smile, 'to convince me of your doc'trine. I have been always an advocate for the same. 'I look upon the two words you mention, to serve only 'as cloaks under which hypocrisy may be the better 'enabled to cheat the world. I have been of that 'opinion ever since I read that charming fellow Man'devil.'

'Pardon me, Madam!' answered Booth; 'I hope 'you do not agree with Mandevil neither, who hath 'represented human nature as the picture of the high-

'est deformity. He hath left out of his system the 'best passion which the mind can possess, and attempts 'to derive the effects or energies of that passion from 'the base impulses of pride or fear. Whereas, it is 'as certain that love exists in the mind of man, as that 'its opposite hatred doth; and the same reasons will 'equally prove the existence of the one, as the exist-'ence of the other.'

'I don't know, indeed, replied the lady; 'I never 'thought much about the matter. This I know, that 'when I read Mandevil, I thought all he said was 'true; and I have been often told, that he proves re-'ligion and virtue to be only mere names. However, 'if he denies there is any such thing as love, that is 'most certainly wrong. I am afraid I can give him the 'lie myself.'

'I will join with you, Madam, in that,' answered Booth, 'at any time.'

'Will you join with me,' answered she, looking eagerly at him---'O Mr. Booth! I know not what I 'was going to say---What---where did you leave off? 'I would not interrupt you---but I am impatient to 'know something.'

'What, Madam,' cries Booth. 'If I can give 'you any satisfaction----'No, no,' said she, 'I must 'hear all; I would not for the world break the thread 'of your story. Besides, I am afraid to ask. Pray, 'pray, Sir, go on.'

'Well, Madam,' cries Booth, 'I think I was 'mentioning the extraordinary acts of friendship done 'me by Captain James; nor can I help taking notice 'of the almost unparalleled fidelity of poor Atkinson, '(for that was my man's name) who was not only 'constant in the assiduity of his attendance, but during 'the time of my danger demonstrated a concern for me 'which I can hardly account for, as my prevailing on 'his captain to make him a serjeant was the first fa-'vour he ever received at my hands, and this did not 'happen till I was almost perfectly recovered of my

'broken

'broken leg. Poor fellow! I ſhall never forget the 'extravagant joy his halbert gave him; I remember 'it the more, becauſe it was one of the happieſt days 'of my own life: for it was upon this day that I re-'ceived a letter from my dear Amelia, after a long ſi-'lence, acquainting me that ſhe was out of all danger 'from her lying-in.

'I was now once more able to perform my duty; 'when (ſo unkind was the fortune of war) the ſecond 'time I mounted guard, I received a violent contuſion 'from the burſting of a bomb. I was felled to the 'ground, where I lay breathleſs by the blow, till ho-'neſt Atkinſon came to my aſſiſtance, and conveyed 'me to my room, where a ſurgeon immediately at-'tended me.

'The injury I had now received was much more 'dangerous in my ſurgeon's opinion than the former; 'it cauſed me to ſpit blood, and was attended with a 'fever and other bad ſymptoms, ſo that very fatal conſequences were apprehended.

'In this ſituation the image of Amelia haunted me 'day and night; and the apprehenſions of never ſeeing 'her more were ſo intolerable, that I had thoughts of 'reſigning my commiſſion, and returning home, weak 'as I was, that I might have, at leaſt, the ſatisfac-'tion of dying in the arms of my love. Captain 'James, however, perſiſted in diſſuading me from any 'ſuch reſolution. He told me my honour was too 'much concerned; attempted to raiſe my hopes of re-'covery to the utmoſt of his power; but chiefly he 'prevailed on me, by ſuggeſting, that if the worſt 'which I apprended ſhould happen, it was much better 'for Amelia that ſhe ſhould be abſent than preſent, in ſo 'melancholy an hour. "I know," cried he, "the ex-"treme joy which muſt ariſe in you from meeting again "with Amelia, and the comfort of expiring in her "arms; but conſider what ſhe herſelf muſt endure "upon the dreadful occaſion, and you would not "wiſh to purchaſe any happineſs at the price of ſo

"much

" much pain to her." This argument at length pre-
' vailed on me; and it was, after many long debates,
' resolved, that she should not even know my present
' condition till my doom either for life or death was
' absolutely fixed.'

' Oh, Heavens! how great, how generous!' cried Miss Matthews. Booth, thou art a noble fellow; and ' I scarce think there is a woman upon earth worthy ' so exalted a passion!'

Booth made a modest answer to the compliment which Miss Matthews had paid him: this drew more civilities from the lady; and these again more acknowledgments. All which we shall pass by, and proceed with our history.

CHAP. VI.

Containing Matters which will please some Readers.

' TWO months, and more, had I continued in a ' state of uncertainty, sometimes with more flat- ' tering, and sometimes with more alarming symptoms; ' when one afternoon poor Atkinson came running into ' my room, all pale and out of breath, and begged me ' not to be surprized at his news. I asked him eagerly ' what was the matter, and if it was any thing con- ' cerning Amelia. I had scarce uttered the dear name, ' when she herself rushed into the room, and ran ha- ' stily to me, crying, " Yes, it is, it is your Amelia ' herself!"

' There is nothing so difficult to describe, and ge- ' nerally so dull when described, as scenes of excessive ' tenderness.'

' Can you think so? says Miss Matthews: ' surely ' there is nothing so charming!---O Mr. Booth! our ' sex is damned by the want of tenderness in yours. ' O, were they all like you!---Certainly no man was ' ever your equal!'

' Indeed, Madam,' cries Booth, ' you honour me ' too much---But---well---when the first transports of ' our meeting were over, Amelia began gently to chide ' me for having concealed my illness from her; for in

' three

'three letters which I had writ her since the accident 'had happened, there was not the least mention of it, 'or any hint given by which she could possibly con- 'clude I was otherwise than in perfect health. And 'when I had excused myself by assigning the true reason, 'she cried, " O Mr. Booth! and do you know so lit- "tle of your Amelia, as to think I could or would sur- "vive you! Would it not be better for one dreadful "sight to break my heart all at once, than to break it "by degrees? O Billy! can any thing pay me for the "loss of this embrace!"-----But I ask your pardon--- 'how ridiculous doth my fondness appear in your 'eyes!'

'How often,' answered she, 'shall I assert the con- 'trary? What would you have me say, Mr. Booth? 'Shall I tell you I envy Mrs. Booth, of all the women 'in the world? Would you believe me, if I did? I 'hope you---what am I saying!----Pray make no fur- 'ther apology, but go on.'

'After a scene,' continued he, 'too tender to be con- 'ceived by many, Amelia informed me that she had 'received a letter from an unknown hand, acquainting 'her with my misfortune, and advising her, if she ever 'desired to see me more, to come directly to Gibraltar. 'She said, she should not have delayed a moment after 'receiving this letter, had not the same ship brought 'her one from me written with rather more than usual 'gaiety, and in which there was not the least mention 'of my indisposition. This, she said, greatly puzzled 'her and her mother, and the worthy divine endea- 'voured to persuade her to give credit to my letter, 'and to impute the other to a species of wit with 'which the world greatly abounds. This consists en- 'tirely in doing various kinds of mischief to our fel- 'low-creatures; by belying one, deceiving another, 'exposing a third, and drawing in a fourth to expose 'himself: in short, by making some the objects of 'laughter, others of contempt; and indeed, not sel-

'dom

'dom, by subjecting them to very great inconveni-
'ences, perhaps to ruin, for the sake of a jest.

Mrs. Harris and the doctor derived the letter from 'this species of wit. Miss Betty, however, was of a 'different opinion, and advised poor Amelia to apply 'to an officer whom the governor had sent over in the 'same ship; by whom the report of my illness was so 'strongly confirmed, that Amelia immediately resolved 'on her voyage.

'I had a great curiosity to know the author of this 'letter; but not the least trace of it could be discovered. 'The only person with whom I lived in any great 'intimacy was Captain James; and he, Madam, 'from what I have already told you, you will think 'to be the last person I could suspect; besides, he de-'clared upon his honour, that he knew nothing of the 'matter; and no man's honour is, I believe, more sa-'cred. There was indeed an ensign of another regi-'ment, who knew my wife, and had sometimes visited 'me in my illness; but he was a very unlikely man to 'interest himself much in any affairs which did not 'concern him: and he too declared he knew nothing 'of it.'

'And did you never discover this secret?' cried Miss Matthews. 'Never to this day,' answered Booth.

'I fancy,' said she, 'I could give a shrewd guess. 'What so likely, as that Mrs. Booth, when you left 'her, should have given her foster-brother orders to 'send her word of whatever befel you?---Yet stay--- 'that could not be neither; for then she would not have 'doubted whether she should leave dear England on the 'receipt of the letter. No; it must have been by some 'other means---yet that, I own, appeared extremely 'natural to me; for if I had been left by such a husband, 'I think I should have pursued the same method.'

'No, Madam,' cried Booth; it must have been con-'veyed by some other channel; for my Amelia, I am 'certain, was entirely ignorant of the manner; and as 'for poor Atkinson, I am convinced he would not

'have

'have ventured to take ſuch a ſtep without acquainting 'me. Beſides, the poor fellow had, I believe, ſuch a 'regard for my wife, out of gratitude for the favours 'ſhe had done his mother, that I make no doubt he was 'highly rejoiced at her abſence from my melancholy 'ſcene. Well, whoever writ it, is a matter very im-'material; yet, as it ſeemed ſo odd and unaccountable 'an incident, I could not help mentioning it.

'From the time of Amelia's arrival nothing remark-'able happened till my perfect recovery; unleſs I ſhould 'obſerve her remarkable behaviour, ſo full of care and 'tenderneſs, that it was perhaps without a parallel.'

'O no, Mr. Booth!' cries the lady; 'it is fully 'equalled, I am ſure, by your gratitude. There is 'nothing, I believe, ſo very rare as gratitude in your 'ſex, eſpecially in huſbands. So kind a remembrance 'is, indeed, more than a return to ſuch an obligation: 'for where is the mighty obligation which a woman 'confers, who being poſſeſſed of an ineſtimable jewel, 'is ſo kind to herſelf as to be careful and tender of it; I 'do not ſay this to leſſen your opinion of Mrs. Booth; 'I have no doubt but that ſhe loves you as well as ſhe 'is capable. But I would not have you think ſo 'meanly of our ſex, as to imagine there are not a thou-'ſand women ſuſceptible of true tenderneſs towards a 'meritorious man. Believe me, Mr. Booth, if I had 'received ſuch an account of an accident having hap-'pened to ſuch a huſband, a mother and a parſon would 'not have held me a moment: I ſhould have leapt into 'the firſt fiſhing-boat I could have found, and bid de-'fiance to the winds and waves. O there is no true 'tenderneſs but in a woman of ſpirit! I would not be 'underſtood all this while to reflect on Mrs. Booth. I 'am only defending the cauſe of my ſex; for, upon my 'ſoul, ſuch compliments to a wife are a ſatire on all 'the reſt of woman-kind.'

'Sure you jeſt, Miſs Matthews,' anſwered Booth, 'with a ſmile. 'However, if you pleaſe, I will pro-'ceed in my ſtory.'

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The Captain, continuing his Story, recounts some Particulars which we doubt not to many good People will appear unnatural.

'I WAS scarce sooner recovered from my indisposition 'than Amelia herself fell ill. This, I am afraid, 'was occasioned by the fatigues which I could not prevent her from undergoing on my account; for as my 'disease went off with violent sweats, during which 'the surgeon strictly ordered that I should lie by myself, 'my Amelia could not be prevailed upon to spend many 'hours in her own bed. During my restless fits, she 'would sometimes read to me several hours together. 'Indeed, it was not without difficulty that she ever 'quitted the bed-side. These fatigues, added to the 'uneasiness of her mind, overpowered her weak spirits, 'and threw her into one of the worst disorders that can 'possibly attend a woman. A disorder very common 'among the ladies, and our physicians have not agreed 'upon its name. Some call it the fever on the spirits, 'some a nervous fever, some the vapours, and some 'the hysterics.'

'O say no more!' cries Miss Matthews: 'I pity 'you, I pity you from my soul! A man had better be 'plagued with all the curses of Egypt, than with a vapourish wife.'

'Pity me, Madam!' answered Booth; 'pity rather 'that dear creature, who, from her love and care of my 'unworthy self, contracted a distemper, the horrors of 'which are scarce to be imagined. It is indeed a sort 'of complication of all diseases together, with almost 'madness added to them. In this situation, the siege 'being at an end, the governor gave me leave to attend 'my wife to Montpelier, the air of which was judged 'to be the most likely to restore her to health. Upon 'this occasion she wrote to her mother to desire a remittance, and set forth the melancholy condition of her 'health, and her necessity for money, in such terms as 'would have touched any bosom not void of humanity,

'though a ſtranger to the unhappy ſufferer.' Her ſiſter 'anſwered it, and I believe I have a copy of the anſwer 'in my pocket. I keep it by me as a curioſity, and you 'would think it more ſo, could I ſhew you my Amelia's letter.'

He then ſearched his pocket-book; and finding the letter, among many others, he read it in the following words---

"DEAR SISTER,

"MY mamma, being much diſordered, hath commanded me to tell you, ſhe is both ſhocked "and ſurprized at your extraordinary requeſt, or, as "ſhe chuſes to call it, order for money. You know, "my dear, ſhe ſays, that your marriage with this red-coat man was entirely againſt her conſent, and the "opinion of all your family, (I am ſure I may here include myſelf in that number) and yet, after this fatal "act of diſobedience, ſhe was prevailed on to receive "you as her child; not, however, nor are you to underſtand it, as the favourite which you was before. "She forgave you, but this was as a Chriſtian and a "parent; ſtill preſerving in her own mind a juſt ſenſe "of your diſobedience, and a juſt reſentment on that "account. And yet, notwithſtanding this reſentment, "ſhe deſires you to remember, that when you a ſecond "time ventured to oppoſe her authority, and nothing "would ſerve you but taking a ramble (an indecent one "I can't help ſaying) after your fellow, ſhe thought fit "to ſhew the exceſs of a mother's tenderneſs, and furniſhed you with no leſs than fifty pounds for your "fooliſh voyage. How can ſhe then be otherwiſe than "ſurprized at your preſent demand? which, ſhould ſhe "be ſo weak to comply with, ſhe muſt expect to be "every month repeated, in order to ſupply the extravagance of a young rakiſh officer. You ſay ſhe will "compaſſionate your ſufferings; yes, ſurely, ſhe doth "greatly compaſſionate them, and ſo do I too, though "you was neither ſo kind nor ſo civil as to ſuppoſe I "ſhould. But I forgive all your ſlights to me, as

"well now as formerly: nay, I not only forgive, but "I pray daily for you. But, dear ſiſter, what could "you expect leſs than what hath happened? you ſhould "have believed your friends, who were wiſer and older "than you. I do not here mean myſelf, though I own "I am eleven months and ſome odd weeks your ſupe- "rior; though, had I been younger, I might, per- "haps, have been able to adviſe you: for wiſdom, "and what ſome may call beauty, do not always go "together. You will not be offended at this: for I "know in your heart you have always held your head "above ſome people, whom, perhaps, other people have "thought better of; but why do I mention what I "ſcorn ſo much? No, my dear ſiſter; Heaven forbid it "ſhould ever be ſaid of me, that I value myſelf upon "my face---not but if I could believe men perhaps--- "but I hate and deſpiſe men---you know I do, my "dear, and I wiſh you had deſpiſed them as much; "but *jacta eſt alea*, as the doctor ſays. You are to "make the beſt of your fortune. What fortune I "mean my mamma may pleaſe to give you: for you "know all is in her power. Let me adviſe you then to "bring your mind to your circumſtances, and remem- "ber (for I cannot help writing it, as it is for your "own good) the vapours are a diſtemper which very "ill become a knapſack. Remember, my dear, what "you have done; remember what my mamma hath "done; remember we have ſomething of yours to keep, "and do not conſider yourſelf as an only child----no, "nor as a favourite child; but be pleaſed to remember, "dear ſiſter, your moſt affectionate ſiſter, and

"moſt obedient humble ſervant,

"E. HARRIS."

'O brave Miſs Betty,' cried Miſs Matthews; 'I al- 'ways held her in high eſteem, but I proteſt ſhe exceeds 'even what I could have expected from her.'

'This letter, Madam,' cries Booth, 'you will be- 'lieve, was an excellent cordial for my poor wife's ſpi- 'rits. So dreadful indeed was the effect it had upon

'her, that as ſhe had read it in my abſence, I found 'her at my return home in the moſt violent fits; and 'ſo long was it before ſhe recovered her ſenſes, that 'I deſpaired of that bleſſed event ever happening, and 'my own ſenſes very narrowly eſcaped from being ſa-'crificed to my deſpair. However ſhe came at laſt to 'herſelf, and I began to conſider of every means of car-'rying her immediately to Montpelier, which was now 'become much more neceſſary than before.

'Though I was greatly ſhocked at the barbarity of 'the letter, yet I apprehended no very ill conſequences 'from it; for as it was believed all over the army that 'I had married a great fortune, I had received offers 'of money, if I wanted it, from more than one. In-'deed, I might have eaſily carried my wife to Montpe-'lier at any time; but ſhe was extremely averſe to the 'voyage, being deſirous of our returning to England, 'as I had leave to do; and ſhe grew daily ſo much 'better, that had it not been for the receipt of that 'curſed------which I have juſt read to you, I am per-'ſuaded ſhe might have been able to return to England 'in the next ſhip.

'Among others, there was a colonel in the garriſon 'who had not only offered, but importuned me to re-'ceive ſome money of him: I now therefore repaired to 'him; and as a reaſon of altering my reſolution, I pro-'duced the letter, and at the ſame time acquainted him 'with the true ſtate of my affairs. The colonel read 'the letter, ſhook his head, and, after ſome ſilence, 'ſaid, he was ſorry I had refuſed to accept his offer be-'fore; but that he had now ſo ordered matters, and diſ-'poſed of his money, that he had not a ſhilling left to 'ſpare from his own occaſions.

'Anſwers of the ſame kind I had from ſeveral others, 'but not one penny could I borrow of any; for I have 'been ſince firmly perſuaded that the honeſt colonel was 'not content with denying me himſelf, but took effec-'tual means, by ſpreading the ſecret I had ſo fooliſhly 'truſted him with, to prevent me from ſucceeding elſe-

'where:

'where; for ſuch is the nature of men, that whoever 'denies himſelf to do you a favour, is unwilling that it 'ſhould be done to you by any other.

'This was the firſt time I had ever felt that diſtreſs 'which ariſes from the want of money: a diſtreſs very 'dreadful indeed in a married ſtate; for what can be 'more miſerable than to ſee any thing neceſſary to the 'preſervation of a beloved creature, and not be able to 'ſupply it?

'Perhaps you may wonder, Madam, that I have not 'mentioned Captain James on this occaſion; but he 'was at the time laid up at Algiers (whither he had been 'ſent by the governor) in a fever. However, he re- 'turned time enough to ſupply me, which he did with 'the utmoſt readineſs, on the very firſt mention of my di- 'ſtreſs; and the good colonel, notwithſtanding his 'having diſpoſed of his money, diſcounted the cap- 'tain's draft. You ſee, Madam, an inſtance in the 'generous behaviour of my friend James, how falſe are 'all univerſal ſatires againſt human kind. He is in- 'deed one of the worthieſt men the world ever pro- 'duced.

'But, perhaps, you will be more pleaſed with the 'extravagant generoſity of my ſerjeant. The day be- 'fore the return of Mr. James, the poor fellow came to 'me, with tears in his eyes, and begged I would not 'be offended at what he was going to mention. He 'then pulled a purſe from his pocket, which contained, 'he ſaid, the ſum of twelve pounds, and which he beg- 'ged me to accept, crying he was ſorry it was not in 'his power to lend me whatever I wanted. I was ſo 'ſtruck with this inſtance of generoſity and friendſhip 'in ſuch a perſon, that I gave him an opportunity of 'preſſing me a ſecond time before I made him an an- 'ſwer. Indeed I was greatly ſurprized how he came 'to be worth that little ſum, and no leſs at his being 'acquainted with my own wants. In both which 'points he preſently ſatisfied me. As to the firſt, it 'ſeems, he had plundered a Spaniſh officer of fifteen

 'piſtoles;

'pistoles; and as to the second, he confessed he had it 'from my wife's maid, who had overheard some discourse between her mistress and me. Indeed people, 'I believe, always deceive themselves, who imagine 'they can conceal distrest circumstances from their servants: for these are always extremely quick-sighted 'on such occasions.'

'Good Heaven! cries Miss Matthews, 'how astonishing is such behaviour in so low a fellow!'

'I thought so myself,' answered Booth! 'and yet I 'know not, on a more strict examination into the matter, why we should be more surprized to see greatness 'of mind discover itself in one degree or rank of life, 'than in another. Love, benevolence, or what you 'please to call it, may be the reigning passion in a beggar as well as in a prince; and whenever it is, its 'energies will be the same.

'To confess the truth, I am afraid we often compliment what we call upper life, with too much injustice, at the expence of the lower. As it is no rare 'thing to see instances which degrade human nature in 'persons of the highest birth and education; so I apprehend, that examples of whatever is really great and 'good have been sometimes found amongst those who 'have wanted all such advantages. In reality, palaces, 'I make no doubt, do sometimes contain nothing but 'dreariness and darkness, and the sun of righteousness 'hath shone forth with all its glory in a cottage.'

CHAP. VIII.

The Story of Booth continued.

MR. Booth thus went on:

'We now took leave of the garrison, and having landed at Marseilles, arrived at Montpelier, 'without any thing happening to us worth remembrance, except the extreme sea-sickness of poor 'Amelia; but I was afterwards well repaid for the 'terrors which it occasioned me, by the good consequences which attended it: for I believe it contributed, even more than the air of Montpelier, to the 'perfect re-establishment of her health.'

'I ask

'I ask your pardon for interrupting you,' cries Miss Matthews, 'but you never satisfied me whether 'you took the serjeant's money. You have made me 'half in love with that charming fellow.'

'How can you imagine, Madam,' answered Booth, 'I should have taken from a poor fellow what was of 'so little consequence to me, and at the same time of 'so much to him? Perhaps now you will derive this 'from the passion of pride.'

'Indeed,' says she, 'I neither derive it from the 'passion of pride, nor from the passion of folly; but 'methinks you should have accepted the offer; and I 'am convinced you hurt him very much when you re-'fused it. But pray proceed in your story.' Then Booth went on as follows:

'As Amelia recovered her health and spirits dai-'ly, we began to pass our time very pleasantly at 'Montpelier: for the greatest enemy to the French 'will acknowledge, that they are the best people in 'the world to live amongst for a little while. In some 'countries it is almost as easy to get a good estate as 'a good acquaintance. In England, particularly, 'acquaintance is of almost as slow growth as an oak; 'so that the age of man scarce suffices to bring it to 'any perfection, and families seldom contract any 'great intimacy till the third, or at least the second 'generation. So shy indeed are we English of letting 'a stranger into our houses, that one would imagine 'we regarded all such as thieves. Now the French 'are the very reverse. Being a stranger among them 'entitles you to the better place, and to the greater 'degree of civility; and if you wear but the appear-'ance of a gentleman, they never suspect you are not 'one. Their friendship indeed seldom extends so far 'as their purse; nor is such friendship usual in other 'countries. To say the truth, politeness carries 'friendship far enough in the ordinary occasions of life, 'and those who want this acccomplishment rarely 'make amends for it by their sincerity: for bluntness,

'or

'or rather rudeneſs, as it commonly deſerves to be 'called, is not always ſo much a mark of honeſty as 'it is taken to be.

'The day after our arrival we became acquainted 'with Monſ. Bagillard. He was a Frenchman of 'great wit and vivacity, with a greater ſhare of learn- 'ing than gentlemen are uſually poſſeſſed of. As he 'lodged in the ſame houſe with us, we were immedi- 'ately acquainted; and I liked his converſation ſo 'well, that I never thought I had too much of his 'company. Indeed I ſpent ſo much of my time with 'him, that Amelia (I know not whether I ought to 'mention it) grew uneaſy at our familiarity, and com- 'plained of my being too little with her, from my vi- 'olent fondneſs of my new acquaintance; for our con- 'verſation turning chiefly upon books, and principally 'Latin ones, (for we read ſeveral of the claſſics toge- 'ther) ſhe could have but little entertainment by be- 'ing with us. When my wife had once taken it into 'her head that ſhe was deprived of my company by 'Mr. Bagillard, it was impoſſible to change her opi- 'nion; and though I ſpent more of my time with her 'than I had ever done before, ſhe ſtill grew more and 'more diſſatisfied, till ſhe at laſt very earneſtly deſired 'me to quit my lodgings, and inſiſted upon it with 'more vehemence than I had ever known her expreſs 'before. To ſay the truth, if that excellent woman 'could ever be thought unreaſonable, I thought ſhe 'was on this occaſion.

'But in what light ſoever her deſires appeared to 'me, as they manifeſtly aroſe from an affection of 'which I had daily the moſt endearing proofs, I re- 'ſolved to comply with her, and accordingly remo- 'ved to a diſtant part of the town; for it is my opi- 'nion, that we can have but little love for the perſon 'whom we will never indulge in an unreaſonable de- 'mand. Indeed, I was under a difficulty in regard 'to Monſ. Bagillard; for as I could not poſſibly 'communicate to him the true reaſon for quitting my

'lodg-

'lodgings, so I found it as difficult to deceive him 'by a counterfeit one; besides I was apprehensive I 'should have little less of his company than before. 'I could, indeed, have avoided this dilemma, by lea-'ving Montpelier; for Amelia had perfectly recover-'ed her health; but I had faithfully promised Cap-'tain James to wait his return from Italy, whither 'he was gone some time before from Gibralter; nor 'was it proper for Amelia to take any long journey, 'she being now near six months gone with child.

'This difficulty, however, proved to be less than I 'had imagined it; for my French friend, whether he 'suspected any thing from my wife's behaviour, though 'she never, as I observed, shewed him the least inci-'vility, became suddenly as cold on his side. After 'our leaving the lodgings, he never made above two 'or three formal visits; indeed his time was soon af-'ter entirely taken up by an intrigue with a certain 'countess, which blazed all over Montpelier.

'We had not been long in our new apartments, be-'fore an English officer arrived at Montpelier, and 'came to lodge in the same house with us. This 'gentleman, whose name was Bath, was of the 'rank of a Major, and had so much singularity in 'his character, that, perhaps, you never heard of 'any like him. He was far from having any of 'those bookish qualifications, which had before cau-'sed my Amelia's disquiet. It is true, his discourse 'generally turned on matters of no feminine kind; 'war and martial exploits being the ordinary topics 'of his conversation: however, as he had a sister 'with whom Amelia was greatly pleased, an intima-'cy presently grew between us, and we four lived in 'one family.

'The major was a great dealer in the marvellous, 'and was constantly the little hero of his own tale. 'This made him very entertaining to Amelia, who, 'of all persons in the world, had the truest taste and 'enjoyment of all the ridiculous; for whilst no one

'sooner

'sooner discovers it in the character of another, no 'one so well conceals her knowledge of it from the ridiculous person. I cannot help mentioning a sentiment of her's on this head, as I think it doth her great honour: "If I had the same contempt," said she, "for ridiculous people, with the generality "of the world, I should rather think them the objects "of tears than laughter; but, in reality, I have "known several who in some parts of their characters "have been extremely ridiculous, in others have "been altogether as amiable. For instance," said 'she, "here is the major, who tells us of many things "which he has never seen, and of others which he has "never done, and both in the most extravagant excess; "and yet how amiable is his behaviour to his poor "sister, whom he hath not only brought over hither "for her health, at his own expence, but is come to "bear her company!" I believe, Madam, I repeat 'her very words; for I am very apt to remember what 'she says.

'You will easily believe, from a circumstance I have 'just mentioned in the major's favour, especially when 'I have told you that his sister was one of the best of 'girls, that it was entirely necessary to hide from her 'all kind of laughter at any part of her brother's behaviour. To say the truth, this was easy enough to do; 'for the poor girl was so blinded with love and gratitude, and so highly honoured and reverenced her brother, that she had not the least suspicion that there was 'a person in the world capable of laughing at him.

'Indeed, I am certain she never made the least discovery of our ridicule; for I am convinced she would 'have resented it; for besides the love she bore her 'brother, she had a little family pride which would 'sometimes appear. To say the truth, if she had any 'fault, it was that of vanity; but she was a very good 'girl upon the whole, and none of us are entirely free 'from faults.'

'You are a good-natured fellow, Will,' answered Miss

Miss Mathews; 'but vanity is a fault of the first magnitude in a woman, and often the occasion of many others.'

To this Booth made no answer, but continued his story.

'In this company we passed two or three months very agreably, till the major and I both betook ourselves to our several nurseries; my wife being brought to bed of a girl, and Miss Bath confined to her chamber by a surfeit, which had like to have occasioned her death.'

Here Miss Matthews burst into a loud laugh, of which when Booth asked the reason, she said she could not forbear, at the thoughts of two such nurses: 'And did you really,' says she, 'make your wife's caudle yourself?'

'Indeed, Madam,' said he, 'I did; and do you think that so very extraordinary?'

'Indeed, I do,' answered she; 'I thought the best husbands had looked on their wives lying-in as a time of festival and jollity. What, did you not even get drunk in the time of your wife's delivery; tell me honestly how you employed yourself at this time?'

'Why then, honestly,' replied he, 'and in defiance of your laughter, I lay behind her bolster, and supported her in my arms; and upon my soul, I believe I felt more pain in my mind than she underwent in her body. And now answer me as honestly: do you really think it a proper time for mirth, when the creature one loves to distraction is undergoing the most racking torments, as well as in the most imminent dangers? and---but I need not express any more tender circumstances.'

'I am to answer honestly,' cried she. 'Yes, and sincerely,' cries Booth. 'Why then, honestly and sincerely,' says she, 'may I never see Heaven, if I don't think you are an angel of a man.'

'Nay, Madam,' answered Booth---but, indeed, you do me too much honour; there are many such

'hus-

'husbands;---nay, have we not an example of the like
'tenderness in the major? though as to him, I believe,
'I shall make you laugh. While my wife lay in,
'Miss Bath being extremely ill, I went one day to the
'door of her apartment, to enquire after her health,
'as well as for the major, whom I had not seen during
'a whole week. I knocked softly at the door, and
'being bid to open it, I found the major in his sister's
'antichamber warming her posset. His dress was
'certainly whimsical enough, having on a woman's bed-
'gown, and a very dirty flannel night-cap, which be-
'ing added to a very odd person, (for he is a very
'aukward thin man near seven feet high) might
'have formed, in the opinion of most men, a very
'proper object of laughter. The major started from
'his seat at my entering into the room, and with
'much emotion, and a great oath, cried out, "Is it
"you, Sir?" I then enquired after his and his sister's
'health. He answered, that his sister was better, and he
'was very well: "though I did not expect, Sir,"
'cried he, with not a little confusion, "to be seen by
"you in this situation." I told him, I thought it im-
'possible he could appear in a situation more becoming
'his character. "You do not?" answered he.
"By G---I am very much obliged to you for that opi-
"nion; but I believe, Sir, however my weakness may
"prevail on me to descend from it, no man can be
"more conscious of his own dignity than myself."
'His sister then called to him from the inner room;
'upon which he rang the bell for her servant, and
'then after a stride or two across the room, he said,
'with an elated aspect, "I would not have you think,
"Mr. Booth, because you have caught me in this dis-
"habille, by coming upon me a little too abruptly,
"I cannot help saying a little too abruptly, that I am
"my sister's nurse. I know better what is due to the
"dignity of a man, and I have shewn it in a line of
"battle. I think I have made a figure there,
"Mr. Booth, and becoming my character; by G--
"I

"I ought not to be deſpiſed too much, if my nature
"is not totally without it's weakneſſes." He uttered
'this, and ſome more of the ſame kind, with great
'majeſty, or, as he called it, dignity. Indeed, he
'uſed ſome hard words that I did not underſtand; for
'all his words are not to be found in a dictionary.
'Upon the whole I could not eaſily refrain from laugh-
'ter; however, I conquered myſelf, and ſoon after
'retired from him, aſtoniſhed that it was poſſible for
'a man to poſſeſs true goodneſs, and be, at the ſame
'time, aſhamed of it.

'But if I was ſurprized at what had paſt at this vi-
'ſit, how much more was I ſurprized the next morn-
'ing, when he came very early to my chamber, and
'told me, he had not been able to ſleep one wink at
'what had paſt between us! "There were ſome words
"of yours," ſaid he, "which muſt be farther explain-
"ed before we part. You told me, Sir, when you
"found me in that ſituation, which I cannot bear to
"recollect, that you thought I could not appear in
"one more becoming my character; theſe were the
"words, I ſhall never forget them. Do you imagine
"that there is any of the dignity of a man wanting
"in my character; do you think that I have, during
"my ſiſter's illneſs, behaved with a weakneſs that fa-
"vours too much of effeminacy? I know how much
"it is beneath a man to whine and whimper about a
"trifling girl as well as you, or any man; and if my
"ſiſter had died, I ſhould have behaved like a man on
"the occaſion. I would not have you think I confi-
"ned myſelf from company merely upon her account.
"I was very much diſordered myſelf. And when you
"ſurprized me in that ſituation, I repeat again, in
"that ſituation, her nurſe had not left the room three
"minutes, and I was blowing the fire for fear it ſhould
"have gone out." In this manner he ran on almoſt a
'quarter of an hour, before he would ſuffer me to ſpeak.
'At laſt, looking ſtedfaſtly in his face, I aſked him if
'I muſt conclude that he was in earneſt. "In earn-

" est," says he, repeating my words, " do you then " take my character for a jest?"---" Look'e, Sir," ' said I, very gravely, " I think we know one another " very well; and I have no reason to suspect you " should impute it to fear, when I tell you, I was so " far from intending to affront you, that I meant you " one of the highest compliments. Tenderness for wo- " men is so far from lessening, that it proves the true " manly character. The manly Brutus shewed the " utmost tenderness to his Portia; and the great king " of Sweden, the bravest, and even fiercest of men, " shut himself up three whole days in the midst of a " campaign, and would see no company on the death " of a favourite sister." At these words, I saw his ' features soften; and he cried out, " D---n me, I ad- " mire the king of Sweden of all the men in the world; " and he is a rascal that is ashamed of doing any thing " which the king of Sweden did. And yet if any " king of Sweden in France was to tell me that his " sister had more merit than mine, by G----, I'd " knock his brains about his ears. Poor little Betsey! " she is the honestest, worthiest, girl that ever was " born. Heaven be praised, she is recovered! for, if " I had lost her, I never should have enjoyed another " happy moment." In this manner he ran on some ' time, till the the tears began to overflow; which, ' when he perceived, he stopt---perhaps he was unable ' to go on; for he seemed almost choaked---after a ' short silence, however, having wiped his eyes with ' his handkerchief, he fetched a deep sigh, and cried, " I am ashamed you should see this, Mr. Booth; but " d---n me, nature will get the better of dignity." ' I now comforted him with the example of Xerxes, ' as I had before done with that of the king of Swe- ' den; and soon after we sat down to breakfast to- ' gether with much cordial friendship: for I assure ' you, with all his oddity, there is not a better na- ' tured man in the world than the major.

' Good natured, indeed!" cried Miss Matthews,

with great scorn. 'A fool! how can you mention 'such a fellow with commendation?'

Booth spoke as much as he could in defence of his friend; indeed he had represented him in as favourable a light as possible, and had particularly left out those hard words, with which, as he hath observed a little before, the major interlarded his discourse. Booth then proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Containing very extraordinary Matters.

'MISS Bath,' continued Booth, 'now recovered so 'fast, that she was abroad as soon as my wife. 'Our little party *quarree* began to grow agreeable 'again; and we mixed with the company of the place 'more than we had done before. Monsieur Bagillard 'now again renewed his intimacy; for the countess his 'mistress was gone to Paris. At which my wife at first 'shewed no dissatisfaction; and I imagined, that as she 'had a friend and companion of her own sex, (for Miss 'Bath and she had contracted the highest fondness for 'each other) she would the less miss my company. 'However, I was disappointed in this expectation; for 'she soon began to express her former uneasiness, and her 'impatience for the arrival of Captain James, that we 'might entirely quit Montpelier.

' 'I could not avoid conceiving some little displeasure 'at this humour of my wife, which I was forced to 'think a little unreasonable.'---'A little do you call it,' says Miss Matthews; 'Good heavens! what a husband 'are you!'---'How little worthy,' answered he, 'as you 'will say hereafter, of such a wife as my Amelia! One 'day as we were sitting together, I heard a violent 'scream; upon which my wife starting up, cried out, "Sure that's Miss Bath's voice!" and immediately ran 'towards the chamber whence it proceeded. I followed 'her; and when we arrived, we there beheld the most 'shocking sight imaginable; Miss Bath lying dead on 'the floor, and the major all bloody kneeling by her, 'and roaring out for assistance. Amelia, though she

'was herself in a little better condition than her friend, 'ran hastily to her, bared her neck, and attempted to 'loosen her stays, while I ran up and down, scarce 'knowing what I did, calling for water and cordials, 'and dispatching several servants one after another for 'doctors and surgeons.

'Water, cordials, and all necessary implements being 'brought, Miss Bath was at length recovered, and pla-'ced in her chair, when the major seated himself by her. 'And now the young lady being restored to life, the 'major, who, till then, had engaged as little of his own, 'as of any other person's attention, became the object of 'all our considerations, especially his poor sister's; who 'had no sooner recovered sufficient strength, than she 'began to lament her brother, crying out that he was 'killed; and bitterly bewailing her fate, in having re-'vived from her swoon to behold so dreadful a spectacle. 'While Amelia applied herself so sooth the agonies of 'her friend, I began to enquire into the condition of 'the major; in which I was assisted by a surgeon, 'who now arrived. The major declared with great 'chearfulness, that he did not apprehend his wound to 'be in the least dangerous, and therefore begged his 'sister to be comforted, saying, he was convinced the 'surgeon would soon give her the same assurance; but 'that good man was not so liberal of assurances as the 'major had expected; for as soon as he had probed the 'wound, he afforded no more than hopes, declaring that 'it was a very ugly wound; but added, by way of con-'solation, that he had cured many much worse.

'When the major was drest, his sister seemed to pos-'sess his whole thoughts, and all his care was to relieve 'her grief. He solemnly protested, that it was no more 'than a flesh wound, and not very deep, nor could, as 'he apprehended, be in the least dangerous; and as for 'the cold expressions of the surgeon, he very well ac-'counted for them from a motive too obvious to be 'mentioned. From these declarations of her brother, 'and the interposition of her friends; and above all, I

'believe,

'believe, from that vast vent which she had given to her 'fright, Miss Bath seemed a little pacified; Amelia 'therefore at last prevailed; and as terror abated, curio-'sity became the superior passion. I therefore now 'began to enquire what had occasioned that accident, 'whence all the uproar arose.

'The major took me by the hand, and looking very 'kindly at me, said, "My dear Mr. Booth, I must "begin by asking your pardon; for I have done you an "injury, for which nothing but the height of friend-"ship in me can be an excuse; and therefore nothing "but the heighth of friendship in you can forgive." 'This preamble, Madam, you will easily believe, great-'ly alarmed all the company, but especially me. I 'answered, "Dear major, I forgive you, let it be what "it will; but what is it possible you can have done to "injure me?"---"That," replied he, "which I am "convinced a man of your honour and dignity of na-"ture, by G---, must conclude to be one of the highest "injuries. I have taken out of your own hands the "doing of yourself justice. I am afraid I have killed "the man who hath injured your honour. I mean, "that villain Bagillard---but I cannot proceed; for you, "Madam," said he to my wife, "are concerned; and "I know what is due to the dignity of your sex." 'Amelia, I observed, turned pale at these words, but 'eagerly begged him to proceed. "Nay, Madam," answered he, "if I am commanded by a lady, it is a "part of my dignity to obey." He then proceeded to 'tell us, that Bagillard had rallied him, upon a sup-'position that he was pursuing my wife with a view of 'gallantry; telling him that he could never succeed; 'giving hints, that if it had been possible, he should 'have succeeded himself; and ended with calling my 'poor Amelia an accomplished prude; upon which the 'major gave Bagillard a box on the ear, and both im-'mediately drew their swords.

'The major had scarce ended his speech, when a ser-'vant came into the room, and told me there was a friar

'below who desired to speak with me in great haste. I 'shook the major by the hand, and told him I not only 'forgave him, but was extremely obliged to his friend-'ship; and then going to the friar, I found that he was 'Bagillard's confessor, from whom he came to me, with 'an earnest desire of seeing me, that he might ask my 'pardon, and receive my forgiveness before he died, for 'the injury he had intended me. My wife at first op-'posed my going, from some sudden fears on my ac-'count; but when she was convinced they were ground-'less, she consented.

'I found Bagillard in his bed; for the major's sword 'had passed up to the very hilt through his body. 'After having very earnestly asked my pardon, he made 'me many compliments on the possession of a woman 'who, joined to the most exquisite beauty, was mistress 'of the most impregnable virtue; as a proof of which, 'he acknowledged the vehemence as well as ill success 'of his attempts; and to make Amelia's virtue appear 'the brighter, his vanity was so predominant, he could 'not forbear running over the names of several women 'of fashion who had yielded to his passion, which he 'said, had never raged so violently for any other as for 'my poor Amelia; and that this violence, which he had 'found wholly unconquerable, he hoped would procure 'his pardon at my hands. It is unnecessary to men-'tion what I said on the occasion. I assured him of my 'entire forgiveness; and so we parted. To say the 'truth, I afterwards thought myself almost obliged to 'him for a meeting with Amelia, the most luxuriously 'delicate that can be imagined.

'I now ran to my wife, whom I embraced with rap-'tures of love and tenderness. When the first torrent 'of these was a little abated, "Confess to me, my dear," 'said she, "could your goodness prevent you from think-"ing me a little unreasonable in expressing so much "uneasiness at the loss of your company, while I ought "to have rejoiced in the thoughts of your being so well "entertained? I know you must; and then consider

" what I muſt have felt, while I knew I was daily " leſſening myſelf in your eſteem, and forced into a con- " duct, which I was ſenſible muſt appear to you, who " was ignorant of my motive, to be mean, vulgar, and " ſelfiſh. And yet what other courſe had I to take, with " a man whom no denial, no ſcorn could abaſh? But if " this was a cruel taſk, how much more wretched ſtill " was the conſtraint I was obliged to wear in his pre- " ſence before you, to ſhew outward civility to the man " whom my ſoul deteſted, for fear of any fatal conſe- " quence from your ſuſpicion; and this too, while I was " afraid he would conſtrue it to be an encouragement. " Do you not pity your poor Amelia, when you reflect " on her ſituation?"---" Pity," cried I, " my love! is " pity an adequate expreſſion for eſteem, for adoration? " But how, my love, could he carry this on ſo ſecretly--- " by letters?"---" O no, he offered me many; but I " never would receive but one, and that I returned him. " Good God! I would not have ſuch a letter in my " poſſeſſion for the univerſe; I thought my eyes con- " taminated with reading it!" 'O brave,' cried Miſs Matthews: 'heroic, I proteſt.

'Had I a wiſh that did not bear
'The ſtamp and image of my dear,
'I'd pierce my heart thro' every vein,
'And die to let it out again.'

'And can you really,' cried he, 'laugh at ſo much 'tenderneſs?'---'I laugh at tenderneſs! O Mr. Booth,' anſwered ſhe, 'thou knoweſt but little of Caliſta.'--- 'I thought formerly,' cried he, 'I knew a great deal, 'and thought you, of all women in the world, to have 'the greateſt------.' 'Of all women!---take care, 'Mr. Booth,' ſaid ſhe. 'By Heaven, if you thought ſo, 'you thought truly---But what is the object of my 'tenderneſs, ſuch an object as---' 'Well, Madam,' ſays he, 'I hope you will find one.'---'I thank you for 'that hope, however,' ſays ſhe, 'cold as it is; but pray 'go on with your ſtory:' which command he immediately obeyed.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Containing a Letter of a very curious Kind.

'THE major's wound,' continued Booth, 'was really 'as slight as he believed it; so that in a few days 'he was perfectly well; nor was Bagillard, though run 'through the body, long apprehended to be in any dan- 'ger of his life. The major then took me aside, and 'wishing me heartily joy of Bagillard's recovery, told 'me I should now, by the gift (as it were) of Heaven, 'have an opportunity of doing myself justice. I an- 'swered, I could not think of any such thing: for that 'when I imagined he was on his death-bed, I had 'heartily and sincerely forgiven him. "Very right," 'replied the major, "and consistent with your honour, "when he was on his death-bed, but that forgiveness "was only conditional, and is revoked by his recovery." 'I told him I could not possibly revoke it; for that my 'anger was really gone. "What hath anger," cried he, "to do with the matter? the dignity of my nature hath "been always my reason for drawing my sword; and "when that is concerned, I can as readily fight with "the man I love, as with the man I hate." I will not 'tire you with the repetition of the whole argument, 'in which the major did not prevail; and I really be- 'lieve I sunk a little in his esteem upon that account, 'till Captain James, who arrived soon after, again per- 'fectly reinstated me in his favour.

'When the captain was come, there remained no 'cause of our longer stay at Montpelier; for as to my 'wife, she was in a better state of health than I ever had 'known her; and Miss Bath had not only recovered her 'health, but her bloom; and from a pale skeleton, was 'become a plump, handsome, young woman. James 'was again my cashier; for, far from receiving any 'remittance, it was now a long time since I had re- 'ceived any letter from England, though both myself 'and my dear Amelia had written several, both to my 'mother and sister; and now, at our departure from 'Montpelier, I bethought myself of writing to my good

'friend

'friend the doctor, acquainting him with our journey to 'Paris, whither I desired he would direct his answer.

'At Paris we all arrived, without encountering any 'adventure on the road worth relating; nor did any 'thing of consequence happen here during the first fort-'night: for as you know neither Captain James nor 'Miss Bath, it is scarce worth telling you, that an affec-'tion, which afterwards ended in a marriage, began now 'to appear between them, in which it may appear odd to 'you that I made the first discovery of the lady's flame, 'and my wife of the captain's.

'The seventeenth day after our arrival at Paris, I 'received a letter from the doctor, which I have in my 'pocket-book; and, if you please, I will read it to you; 'for I would not willingly do any injury to his words.'

The lady, you may easily belive, desired to hear the letter; and Booth read it as follows.

"MY DEAR CHILDREN,

"FOR I will now call you so, as you have neither of "you now any other parent in the world. Of this "melancholy news I should have sent you earlier notice, "if I had thought you ignorant of it, or indeed if I had "known whither to have written. If your sister hath "received any letters from you, she hath kept them a "secret, and perhaps, out of affection to you, hath re-"posited them in the same place where she keeps her "goodness, and, what I am afraid is much dearer "to her, her money. The reports concerning you have "been various; so is always the case in matters where "men are ignorant; for when no man knows what the "truth is, every man thinks himself at liberty to report "what he pleases. Those who wish you well, son "Booth, say simply that you are dead; others, that you "ran away from the siege, and was cashiered. As for "my daughter, all agree that she is a saint above; and "there are not wanting those who hint that her husband "sent her thither. From this beginning, you will ex-"pect, I suppose, better news than I am going to tell

"you;

" you; but pray, my dear children, why may not I, " who have always laughed at my own afflictions, " laugh at yours, without the censure of much malevo- " lence? I wish you could learn this temper from me; " for, take my word for it, nothing truer ever came from " the mouth of a heathen, than that sentence—

" *Leve fit quod bene fertur onus* *."

" And though I must confess, I ever thought Aristotle " (whom I do not take for so great a blockhead as some " who have never read him) doth not very well resolve " the doubt which he hath raised in his Ethicks, viz. " How a man, in the midst of King Priam's misfor- " tunes, can be called happy? Yet I have long thought " that there is no calamity so great, that a Christian " philosopher may not reasonably laugh at it. If the " heathen Cicero, doubting of immortality, (for so wise " a man must have doubted of that which had such slen- " der arguments to support it) could assert it as the " office of wisdom, *Humanas res despicere atque infra se* " *positas arbitrari* *.

" Which passage, with much more to the same pur- " pose, you will find in the third book of his Tus- " culan Questions.

" With how much greater confidence may a good " Christian despise, and even deride, all temporary and " short transitory evils! If the poor wretch, who is " trudging on to his miserable cottage, can laugh at the " storms and tempests, the rain and whirlwinds which " surround him, while his richest hope is only that of " rest; how much more chearfully must a man pass " through such transient evils, whose spirits are buoyed " up with the certain expectation of finding a noble pa- " lace, and the most sumptuous entertainment ready to " receive him? I do not much like the simile; but I " cannot think of a better. And yet, inadequate as the

* The burden becomes light by being well borne.

† To look down on all human affairs as matters below his consideration.

"simile is, we may, I think, from the actions of mankind, conclude that they will consider it as much too strong; for in the case I have put of the entertainment, is there any man so tender or poor-spirited as not to despise and often to deride the fiercest of those inclemencies which I have mentioned? But in our journey to the glorious mansions of everlasting bliss, how severely is every little rub, every trifling accident, lamented! and if Fortune showers down any of her heavier storms upon us, how wretched do we presently appear to ourselves and to others! The reason of this can be no other than that we are not in earnest in our faith; at the best, we think with too little attention on this our great concern. While the most paltry matters of this world, even those pitiful trifles, those childish gewgaws, riches and honours, are transacted with the utmost eagerness, and most serious application, the grand weighty affair of immortality is postponed and disregarded, nor ever brought into the least competition with our affairs here. If one of my cloth should begin a discourse of heaven in the scenes of business or pleasure, in the Court of Requests, at Garraway's, or at White's, would he gain a hearing, unless, perhaps, of some sorry jester who would desire to ridicule him? would he not presently acquire the name of the Mad Parson, and be thought by all men worthy of Bedlam? or would he not be treated as the Romans treated their Aretalogi*, and considered in the light of a buffoon? But why should I mention those places of hurry and worldly pursuit! what attention do we engage even in the pulpit? Here, if a sermon be prolonged a little beyond the usual hour, doth it not set half the audience asleep? as I question not I have by this time both my children. Well, then, like a good-natured surgeon, who prepares his patient for a painful operation, by endea-

* A set of beggarly philosophers, who diverted great men at their tables with burlesque discourses on virtue.

"vouring

"vouring as much as he can to deaden his sensation, I "will now communicate to you, in your slumbering "condition, the news with which I threatened you. "Your good mother, you are to know, is dead at last, "and hath left her whole fortune to her elder daughter. "This is all the ill news I have to tell you. Confess "now, if you are awake, did you not expect it was "much worse? did you not apprehend that your charm-"ing child was dead! Far from it; he is in perfect "health, and the admiration of every body: what is "more, he will be taken care of, with the tenderness of "a parent, till your return. What pleasure must this "give you! if indeed any thing can add to to the hap-"piness of a married couple, who are extremely and "deservedly fond of each other, and, as you write me, "in perfect health. A superstitious heathen would "have dreaded the malice of Nemesis in your situation; "but as I am a Christian, I shall venture to add ano-"ther circumstance to your felicity, by assuring you "that you have, besides your wife, a faithful and zea-"lous friend. Do not, therefore, my dear children, "fall into that fault which the excellent Thucydides "observes is too common in human nature, to bear "heavily the being deprived of the smaller good, with-"out conceiving, at the same time, any gratitude for "the much greater blessings which we are suffered to "enjoy. I have only farther to tell you, my son, that "when you call at Mr. Morand's, Rue Dauphiné, you "will find yourself worth a hundred pounds. Good "Heaven! how much richer are you than millions of "people who are in want of nothing! Farewel, and "know me for your sincere and affectionate friend."

'There, Madam,' cries Booth, 'how do you like 'the letter?'

'Oh, extremely!' answered she: the doctor is a 'charming man; I always loved dearly to hear him 'preach. I remember to have heard of Mrs. Harris's 'death above a year before I left the country; but never 'knew

'knew the particulars of her will before. I am extremely ſorry for it, upon my honour!'

'Oh, fye! Madam,' cries Booth, have you ſo ſoon forgot the chief purport of the doctor's letter?'

'Aye, aye,' cried ſhe; 'theſe are very pretty things to read, I acknowledge: but the loſs of fortune is a ſerious matter; and I am ſure a man of Mr. Booth's underſtanding muſt think ſo.'---'One conſideration, I muſt own, Madam,' anſwered he, 'a good deal baffled all the doctor's arguments. This was the concern for my little growing family, who muſt one day feel the loſs; nor was I ſo eaſy upon Amelia's account as upon my own, though ſhe herſelf put on the utmoſt chearfulneſs, and ſtretched her invention to the utmoſt to comfort me. But ſure, Madam, there is ſomething in the doctor's letter to admire beyond the philoſophy of it: what think you of that eaſy, generous, friendly manner, in which he ſent me the hundred pounds?'

'Very noble and great indeed!' replied ſhe: 'but go on with your ſtory; for I long to hear the whole.'

CHAP. XI.

In which Mr. Booth relates his Return to England.

'NOTHING remarkable, as I remember, happened during our ſtay at Paris, which we left ſoon after, and came to London. Here we reſted only two days; and then, taking leave of our fellow-travellers, we ſet out for Wiltſhire, my wife being ſo impatient to ſee the child which ſhe had left behind her, that the child ſhe carried with her was almoſt killed with the fatigue of the journey.

'We arrived at our inn late in the evening. Amelia, though ſhe had no great reaſon to be pleaſed with any part of her ſiſter's behaviour, reſolved to behave to her as if nothing wrong had ever happened. She therefore ſent a kind note to her the moment of our arrival, giving her her option whether ſhe would come to us at the inn, or whether we ſhould that evening wait on her. The ſervant, after waiting an hour, brought us an

'answer, excusing her from coming to us so late, as she 'was disordered with a cold, and desiring my wife by no 'means to think of venturing out after the fatigue of 'her journey; saying, she would, on that account, defer 'the great pleasure of seeing her till the morning; with- 'out taking any more notice of your humble servant, 'than if no such person had been in the world, though I 'had very civilly sent my compliments to her. I should 'not mention this trifle, if it was not to shew you the 'nature of the woman, and that it will be a kind of key 'to her future conduct.

'When the servant returned, the good doctor, who 'had been with us almost all the time of his absence, 'hurried us away to his house, where we presently found 'a supper and a bed prepared for us. My wife was 'eagerly desirous to see her child that night; but the 'doctor would not suffer it; and as he was at nurse at a 'distant part of the town, and the doctor assured her he 'had seen him in perfect health that evening, she suf- 'fered herself at last to be dissuaded.

'We spent that evening in the most agreeable manner: 'for the doctor's wit and humour, joined to the highest 'chearfulness and good-nature, made him the most 'agreeable companion in the world: and he was now 'in the highest spirits, which he was pleased to place to 'our account. We sat together to a very late hour: 'for so excellent is my wife's constitution, that she de- 'clared she was scarce sensible of any fatigue from her 'late journies.

'Amelia slept not a wink all night, and in the morn- 'ing early the doctor accompanied us to the little in- 'fant. The transports we felt on this occasion were 'really enchanting; nor can any but a fond parent con- 'ceive, I am certain, the least idea of them. Our 'imaginations suggested an hundred agreeable circum- 'stances, none of which had, perhaps, any foundation. 'We made words and meaning out of every sound, and 'in every feature I found out some resemblance to my 'Amelia, as she did to me.

'But

'But I ask your pardon for dwelling on such incidents; and will proceed to scenes which, to most persons, will be more entertaining.

'We went hence to pay a visit to Miss Harris, whose reception of us, was, I think, truly ridiculous; and, as you know the lady, I will endeavour to describe it particularly. At our first arrival we were ushered into a parlour, where we were suffered to wait almost an hour. At length the lady of the house appeared in deep mourning, with a face, if possible, more dismal than her dress, in which, however, there was every appearance of art. Her features were indeed screwed up to the very height of grief. With this face, and in the most solemn gait, she approached Amelia, and coldly saluted her. After which, she made me a very distant formal curtsey, and we all sat down. A short silence now ensued, which Miss Harris at length broke with a deep sigh, and said, "Sister, here is a great alteration in this place since you saw it last; Heaven hath been pleased to take my poor mother to itself!" (Here she wiped her eyes, and then continued) "I hope I know my duty, and have learned a proper resignation to the Divine Will; but something is to be allowed to grief for the best of mothers; for so she was to us both; and if at last she made any distinction, she must have had her reasons for so doing. I am sure I can truly say I never wished, much less desired it." The tears now stood in poor Amelia's eyes; indeed she had paid too many already to the memory of so unnatural a parent. She answered with the sweetness of an angel, that she was far from blaming her sister's emotions on so tender an occasion; that she heartily joined with her in her grief: for that nothing which her mother had done in the latter part of her life could efface the remembrance of that tenderness which she had formerly shewn her. Her sister caught hold of the word efface, and rung the changes upon it. "Efface!" cried

'she; " O Miss Emily! (for you must not expect me " to repeat names that will be for ever odious) I wish, " indeed, every thing could be effaced. Effaced! O " that that was possible; we might then have still en- " joyed my poor mother; for I am convinced she never " recovered her grief on a certain occasion." Thus she ' ran on; and after many bitter strokes upon her sister, ' at last directly charged her mother's death on my mar- ' riage with Amelia. I could be silent then no longer. ' I reminded her of the perfect reconciliation between us ' before my departure, and the great fondness which she ' expressed for me; nor could I help saying in very plain ' terms, that if she had ever changed her opinion of me, ' as I was not conscious of having deserved such a ' change by my own behaviour, I was well convinced ' to whose good offices I owed it! Guilt hath very quick ' ears to an accusation. Miss Harris immediately an- ' swered to the charge. She said, such suspicions were ' no more than she expected; that they were of a piece ' with every other part of my conduct, and gave her ' one consolation, that they served to account for her ' sister Emily's unkindness, as well to herself as to her ' poor deceased mother, and in some measure lessened the ' guilt of it with regard to her, since it was not easy to ' know how far a woman is in the power of her hus- ' band. My dear Amelia reddened at this reflection on ' me; and begged her sister to name any single instance ' of unkindness or disrespect, in which she had ever of- ' fended. To this the other answered, (I am sure I re- ' peat her words, though I cannot mimic either the ' voice or air with which they were spoken) " Pray, " Miss Emily, which is to be the judge; yourself or " that gentleman? I remember the time when I could " have trusted your judgment in any affair; but you " are now no longer mistress of yourself, and are not " answerable for your actions. Indeed, it is my con- " stant prayer that your actions may not be imputed to " you. It was the constant prayer of that blessed wo-

" man, my dear mother, who is now a saint above; a " saint whose name I can never mention without a tear, " though I find you can hear it without one. I cannot " help observing some concern on so melancholy an oc- " casion; it seems due to decency; but, perhaps, (for " I always wish to excuse you) you are forbid to cry." ' The idea of being bid or forbid to cry, struck so ' strongly on my fancy, that indignation only could ' have prevented me from laughing. But my narra- ' tive, I am afraid, begins to grow tedious. In short, ' after hearing, for near an hour, every malicious insi- ' nuation which a fertile genius could invent, we took ' our leave, and separated, as persons who would never ' willingly meet again.

' The next morning after this interview, Amelia re- ' ceived a long letter from Miss Harris; in which, after ' many bitter invectives against me, she excused her ' mother, alledging that she had been driven to do as ' she did, in order to prevent Amelia's ruin, if her for- ' tune had fallen into my hands. She likewise very re- ' motely hinted, that she would be only a trustee for ' her sister's children, and told her, that on one condi- ' tion only she would consent to live with her as a sister; ' this was, if she could by any means be separated from ' that man, as she was pleased to call me, who had ' caused so much mischief in the family.

' I was so enraged at this usage, that had not Ame- ' lia intervened, I believe I should have applied to a ' magistrate for a search-warrant for that picture, which ' there was so much reason to suspect she had stolen; ' and which, I am convinced, upon a search, we should ' have found in her possession.'

' Nay, it is possible enough,' cries Miss Matthews; ' for I believe there is no wickedness of which the lady ' is not capable.'

' This agreeable letter was succeeded by another of ' the like comfortable kind, which informed me that ' the company in which I was, being an additional one

'raised in the beginning of the war, was reduced; so 'that I was now a lieutenant on half-pay.'

'Whilst we were meditating on our present situation, 'the doctor came to us. When we related to him the 'manner in which my sister had treated us, he cried 'out, "Poor soul! I pity her heartily:" for this is 'the severest resentment he ever expresses; indeed, I 'have often heard him say, that a wicked soul is the 'greatest object of compassion in the world.' A sentiment which we shall leave the reader a little time to digest.

CHAP. XII.

In which Mr. Booth concludes his Story.

'THE next day the doctor set out for his parsonage, 'which was thirty miles distant, whither Amelia 'and myself accompanied him, and where we stayed 'with him all the time of his residence there, being al'most three months.

'The situation of the parish under my good friend's 'care is very pleasant. It is placed among meadows, 'washed by a clear trout stream, and flanked on both 'sides with downs. His house, indeed, would not 'much attract the admiration of the virtuoso. He built 'it himself, and it is remarkable only for its plainness, 'with which the furniture so well agrees, that there is 'no one thing in it that may not be absolutely necessary, 'except books, and the prints of Mr. Hogarth, whom 'he calls a moral satirist.

'Nothing, however, can be imagined more agreeable 'than the life that the doctor leads in this homely house, 'which he calls his earthly paradise.

'All his parishioners, whom he treats as his 'children, regard him as their common father. Once 'in a week he constantly visits every house in the 'parish; examines, commends, and rebukes, as he 'finds occasion. This is practised likewise by his 'curate in his absence; and so good an effect is 'produced by this their care, that no quarrels ever

'proceed either to blows or law-suits; no beggar is to 'be found in the whole parish; nor did I ever hear a 'very profane oath all the time I lived in it.

'But to return from so agreeable a digression to my 'own affairs, that are much less worth your attention. 'In the midst of all the pleasures I tasted in this sweet 'place, and the most delightful company, the woman 'and man whom I loved above all things, melancholy 'reflections concerning my unhappy circumstances 'would often steal into my thoughts. My fortune 'was now reduced to less than forty pounds a year; I 'had already two children, and my dear Amelia was 'again with child.

'One day the doctor found me sitting by myself, and 'employed in melancholy contemplations on this sub-'ject. He told me he had observed me growing of late 'very serious; that he knew the occasion, and neither 'wondered at, nor blamed me. He then asked me if I 'had any prospect of going again into the army; if 'not, what scheme of life I proposed to myself.

'I told him, that as I had no powerful friends, I 'could have but little expectations in a military way; 'that I was incapable of thinking of any other scheme, 'as all business required some knowledge or experience, 'and likewise money to set up with; of all which I was 'destitute.

"You must know then, child," said the doctor, "that I have been thinking on this subject as well as "you: for I can think, I promise you, with a pleasant "countenance." These were his words. "As to the "army, perhaps means might be found of getting you "another commission; but my daughter seems to have a "violent objection to it; and to be plain, I fancy you "yourself will find no glory make you amends for your "absence from her. And for my part," said he, "I never "think those men wise, who for any worldly interest "forego the greatest happiness of their lives. If I mis-"take not," says he, "a country life, where you could

"be

" be always together, would make you both much hap-
" pier people."

' I answered, that of all things I preferred it most;
' and I believed Amelia was of the same opinion.

' The doctor, after a little hesitation, proposed to me
' to turn farmer, and offered to let me his parsonage,
' which was then become vacant. He said, it was a
' farm which required but little stock, and that little
' should not be wanting. I embraced this offer very ea-
' gerly, and with great thankfulness; and immediately
' repaired to Amelia to communicate it to her, and to
' know her sentiments.

' Amelia received the news with the highest trans-
' ports of joy; she said, that her greatest fear had al-
' ways been of my entering again into the army. She
' was so kind as to say, that all stations of life were
' equal to her, unless as any one afforded her more of
' my company than another. " And as to our chil-
" dren," said she, " let us breed them up to an hum-
" ble fortune; they will be contented with it: for none,"
' added my angel, " deserve happiness, or indeed are
" capable of it, who make any particular station a ne-
" cessary ingredient."

' Thus, Madam, you see me degraded from my for-
' mer rank in life; no longer Captain Booth, but Far-
' mer Booth at your service.

' During my first year's continuance in this new
' scene of life, nothing, I think, remarkable happened;
' the history of one day would, indeed, be the history
' of the whole year.'

' Well, pray then,' said Miss Matthews, ' do let us
' hear the history of that day; I have a strange curi-
' osity to know how you could kill your time; and do,
' if possible, find out the very best day you can.'

' If you command me, Madam,' answered Booth,
' you must yourself be accountable for the dulness of
' the narrative. Nay, I believe, you have imposed a
' very difficult task on me; for the greatest happiness is
' incapable of description.

' I rose,

'I rose, then, Madam----' 'O, the moment you 'waked, undoubtedly!' said Miss Matthews.

'Usually,' said he, 'between five and six.' 'I will 'have no usually,' cried Miss Matthews; you are confined 'to a day, and it is to be the best and happiest in the year.'

'Nay, Madam,' cries Booth, 'then I must tell you 'the day in which Amelia was brought to bed, after a 'painful and dangerous labour; for that I think was 'the happiest day of my life.'

'I protest,' said she, 'you are become Farmer Booth 'indeed. What a happiness have you painted to my 'imagination! you put me in mind of a newspaper, 'where my lady such-a-one is delivered of a son, to the 'great joy of some illustrious family.'

'Why then, I do assure you, Miss Matthews, cries 'Booth, 'I scarce know a circumstance that distin-'guished one day from another. The whole was one 'continued series of love, health, and tranquility. Our 'lives resembled a calm sea.'

'The dullest of all ideas,' cries the lady.

'I know,' said he, 'it must appear dull in descrip-'tion; for who can describe the pleasures which the 'morning air gives to one in perfect health; the flow 'of spirits which springs up from exercise; the de-'lights which parents feel from the prattle and inno-'cent follies of their children; the joy with which the 'tender smile of a wife inspires a husband; or, lastly, 'the cheerful, solid comfort, which a fond couple enjoy 'in each other's conversation!------All these pleasures, 'and every other of which our situation was capable, 'we tasted in the highest degree. Our happiness was, 'perhaps, too great; for fortune seemed to grow en-'vious of it, and interposed one of the most cruel acci-'dents that could have befallen us, by robbing us of 'our dear friend the doctor.'---'I am sorry for it,' said 'Miss Matthews; 'he was indeed a valuable man, and 'I never heard of his death before.'

'Long may it be before any one hears of it!' cries

Booth,

Booth. 'He is, indeed, dead to us; but will, I hope, 'enjoy many happy years of life. You know, Madam, the obligations he had to his patron the earl; indeed, it was impossible to be once in his company 'without hearing of them: I am sure you will neither 'wonder that he was chosen to attend the young lord in 'his travels as his tutor, nor that the good man, however disagreeable it might be (as in fact it was) to his 'inclination, should comply with the earnest request of 'his friend and patron.

'By this means I was not only bereft of the best companion in the world, but of the best counsellor; a loss, 'of which I have since felt the bitter consequence; for no 'greater advantage, I am convinced, can arrive to a 'young man who hath any degree of understanding, 'than an intimate converse with one of riper years, who 'is not only able to advise, but who knows the manner of advising. By this means alone, youth can enjoy the benefit of the experience of age, and that at a 'time of life when such experience will be of more service to a man than when he hath lived long enough 'to acquire it of himself.

'From want of my sage counsellor, I now fell into 'many errors. The first of these was in enlarging my 'business, by adding a farm of one hundred a year to 'the parsonage; in renting which I had also as bad a 'bargain as the doctor had before given me a good one. 'The consequence of which was, that whereas, at the 'end of the first year I was worth upwards of fourscore 'pounds; at the end of the second I was near half that 'sum worse (as the phrase is) than nothing.

'A second folly I was guilty of, in uniting families 'with the curate of the parish, who had just married, 'as my wife and I thought, a very good sort of a woman. We had not, however, lived one month together, before I plainly perceived this good sort of woman had taken a great prejudice against my Amelia; 'for which, if I had not known something of the hu-

'man passions, and that high place which envy holds 'among them, I should not have been able to account; 'for so far was my angel from having given her any 'cause of dislike, that she had treated her not only with 'civility, but kindness.

'Besides superiority in beauty, which, I believe, all 'the world would have allowed to Amelia, there was 'another cause of this envy, which I am almost ashamed 'to mention, as it may well be called my greatest 'folly. You are to know then, Madam, that from a 'boy I had been always fond of driving a coach, in 'which I valued myself on having some skill. This, 'perhaps, was an innocent, but I allow it to have been 'a childish vanity. As I had an opportunity, there- 'fore, of buying an old coach and harness very cheap, '(indeed they cost me but twelve pounds) and as I con- 'sidered the same horses which drew my waggon would 'likewise draw my coach, I resolved on indulging my- 'self in the purchase.

'The consequence of setting up this poor old coach 'is inconceivable. Before this, as my wife and myself 'had very little distinguished ourselves from the other 'farmers and their wives, either in our dress or our 'way of living, they treated us as their equals; but 'now they began to consider us as elevating ourselves 'into a state of superiority, and immediately began to 'envy, hate, and declare war against us. The neigh- 'bouring little squires, too, were uneasy to see a poor 'renter become their equal in a matter in which they 'place so much dignity; and not doubting but it arose 'in me from the same ostentation, they began to hate 'me likewise, and to turn my equipage into ridicule; 'asserting that my horses, which were as well matched 'as any in the kingdom, were of different colours and 'sizes; with much more of that kind of wit, the only 'basis of which is lying.

'But what will appear most surprizing to you, Ma- 'dam, was, that the curate's wife, who being lame,

'had

'had more use of the coach than my Amelia, (indeed 'she seldom went to church in any other manner) was 'one of my bitterest enemies on the occasion. If she 'had ever any dispute with Amelia, which all the 'sweetness of my poor girl could not sometimes avoid, 'she was sure to introduce, with a malicious sneer, "Though my husband doth not keep a coach, Ma-"dam." Nay, she took this opportunity to upbraid 'my wife with the loss of her fortune! alledging, that 'some folks might have had as good pretensions to a 'coach as other folks; and a better too, as they 'brought a better fortune to their husbands. But that 'all people had not the art of making bricks without 'straw.

'You will wonder, perhaps, Madam, how I can 'remember such stuff, which, indeed, was a long time 'only matter of amusement to both Amelia and myself; 'but we at last experienced the mischievous nature of 'envy, and that it tends rather to produce tragical 'than comical events. My neighbours now began to 'conspire against me. They nick-named me, in deri-'sion, the squire farmer. Whatever I bought, I was 'sure to buy dearer; and when I sold, I was obliged 'to sell cheaper than any other. In fact, they were all 'united; and while they every day committed trespasses 'on my lands with impunity, if any of my cattle 'escaped into their fields, I was either forced to enter 'into a law-suit, or to make amends four-fold for the 'damages sustained.

'The consequences of all this could be no other, 'than that ruin which ensued. Without tiring you 'with particulars, before the end of four years I be-'came involved in debt near three hundred pounds more 'than the value of all my effects. My landlord seized 'my stock for rent; and, to avoid immediate confine-'ment in prison, I was forced to leave the country, 'with all that I hold dear in the world, my wife, and 'my poor little family.

'In

'In this condition, I arrived in town five or fix days 'ago. I had juft taken a lodging in the verge of the 'court, and writ my dear Amelia word where fhe 'might find me, when fhe had fettled her affairs in the 'beft manner fhe could. That very evening, as I was 'returning home from a coffee-houfe, a fray happening 'in the ftreet, I endeavoured to affift the injured party, 'when I was feized by the watch, and after being con-'fined all night in the round-houfe, was conveyed in 'the morning before a juftice of the peace, who com-'mitted me hither; where I fhould probably have 'ftarved, had I not, from your hands, found a moft 'unaccountable prefervation. And here, give me leave 'to affure you, my dear Mifs Matthews, that whatever 'advantage I may have reaped from your misfortune, 'I fincerely lament it; nor would I have purchafed 'any relief at the price of feeing you in this dreadful 'place.'

He fpake thefe laft words with great tendernefs: for he was a man of confummate good-nature, and had formerly had much affection for this young lady; indeed, more than the generality of people are capable of entertaining for any perfon whatfoever.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

Containing very myfterious Matter.

MISS Matthews did not in the leaft fall fhort of Mr. Booth in expreffions of tendernefs. Her eyes, the moft eloquent orators on fuch occafions, exerted their utmoft force; and, at the conclufion of his fpeech, fhe caft a look as languifhingly fweet, as ever Cleopatra gave to Anthony. In real fact, this Mr. Booth had been her firft love, and had made thofe impreffions on her young heart, which the learned in this branch of philofophy affirm, and perhaps truly, are never to be eradicated.

When Booth had finished his story, a silence ensued of some minutes; an interval which the painter would describe much better than the writer. Some readers may, however, be able to make pretty pertinent conjectures, by what I have said above, especially when they are told that Miss Matthews broke the silence with a sigh, and cried, 'Why is Mr. Booth unwilling to 'allow me the happiness of thinking my misfortunes 'have been of some little advantage to him? Sure the 'happy Amelia would not be so selfish to envy me that 'pleasure. No; not if she was as much the fondest as 'she is the happiest of women.'---'Good Heaven! 'Madam,' said he, 'do you call my poor Amelia the 'happiest of women!'---'Indeed I do,' answered she briskly: 'O, Mr. Booth! there is a speck of white in 'her fortune, which, when it falls to the lot of a sen-'sible woman, makes her full amends for all the crosses 'which can attend her. Perhaps she may not be sensi-'ble of it; but if it had been my blessed fate---O Mr. 'Booth; could I have thought when we were first ac-'quainted, that the most agreeable man in the world 'had been capable of making the kind, the tender, 'the affectionate, husband---the happy Amelia in those 'days was unknown; Heaven had not then given her 'a prospect of the happiness that it intended her---but 'yet it did intend it her: for sure there is a fatality in 'the affairs of love; and the more I reflect on my own life, 'the more I am convinced of it. O Heavens! how a 'thousand little circumstances croud into my mind. 'When you first marched into our town, you had then 'the colours in your hand; as you passed under the 'window where I stood, my glove by accident dropt 'into the street; you stooped, took up my glove, and, 'putting it upon the spike belonging to your colours, 'lifted it up to the window. Upon this, a young lady, 'who stood by, said, "So, Miss; the young officer "hath accepted your challenge." I blushed then, and 'I blush now, when I confess to you I thought you

'the

'the prettiest young fellow I had ever seen; and, upon 'my soul, I believe you was then the prettiest fellow in 'the world.' Booth here made a low bow, and cried, 'O dear Madam, how ignorant was I of my own hap-'piness!'---'Would you really have thought so?' an-swered she: 'however, there is some politeness, if there 'be no sincerity in what you say.' Here the governor of the enchanted castle interrupted them, and entering the room without any ceremony, acquainted the lady and gentleman, that it was locking up time; and ad-dressing Booth by the name of captain, asked him if he would not please to have a bed; adding, that he might have one in the next room to the lady, but that it would come dear; for that he never let a bed in that room un-der a guinea, nor could he afford it cheaper to his father.

No answer was made to this proposal; but Miss Matthews, who had already learnt some of the ways of the house, said, she believed Mr. Booth would like to drink a glass of something; upon which the governor immediately trumpeted forth the praises of his rack-punch, and without waiting for any farther commands, presently produced a large bowl of that liquor.

The governor having recommended the goodness of his punch by a hearty draught, began to revive the other matter, saying, that he was just going to bed, and must first lock up. 'But, suppose,' said Miss Matthews, with a smile, 'the captain and I should 'have a mind to sit up all night?' ---'With all my 'heart,' said the governor; but I expect a consideration 'for those matters. For my part, I don't enquire in-'to what doth not concern me; but single and double 'are two things. If I lock up double, I expect half 'a guinea; and I am sure the captain cannot think 'that's out of the way: it is but the price of a 'bagnio.'

Miss Matthews's face became of the colour of scar-let at those words. However, she mustered up her spi-

rits, and turning to Booth, said, 'What say you, 'captain? for my own part, I had never less inclination to sleep: which hath the greater charms for you, 'the punch or the pillow?'---'I hope, Madam,' answered Booth, 'you have a better opinion of me, than 'to doubt my preferring Miss Matthews's conversation 'to either.'---'I assure you,' replied she, 'it is no 'compliment to you, to say, I prefer yours to sleep at 'this time.'

The governor then, having received his fee, departed; and turning the key, left the gentleman and lady to themselves.

In imitation of him, we will lock up likewise a scene which we do not think proper to expose to the eyes of the public. If any over-curious readers should be disappointed on this occasion, we will recommend such readers to the apologies with which certain gay ladies have lately been pleased to oblige the world, where they will possibly find every thing recorded that passed at this interval.

But though we decline painting the scene, it is not our intention to conceal from the world the frailty of Mr. Booth, or of his fair partner, who certainly passed that evening in a manner inconsistent with the strict rules of virtue and chastity.

To say the truth, we are much more concerned for the behaviour of the gentleman, than of the lady; not only for his sake, but for the sake of the best woman in the world, whom we should be sorry to consider as yoked to a man of no worth nor honour.

We desire, therefore, the good-natured and candid reader will be pleased to weigh attentively the several unlucky circumstances which occurred so critically, that Fortune seemed to have used her utmost endeavours to ensnare poor Booth's constancy. Let the reader set before his eyes a fine young woman, in a manner a first love, conferring obligations, and using every art to soften, to allure, to win, and to enflame; let him con-

ſider the time and place; let him remember that Mr. Booth was a young fellow in the higheſt vigour of his life; and, laſtly, let him add one ſingle circumſtance, that the parties were alone together; and then if he will not acquit the defendant, be muſt be convicted; for I have nothing more to ſay in his defence.

C H A P. II.

The latter Part of which we expect will pleaſe our Reader better than the former.

A Whole week did our lady and gentleman live in this criminal converſation, in which the happineſs of the former was much more perfect than that of the latter; for though the charms of Miſs Matthews, and her exceſſive endearments, ſometimes lulled every thought in the ſweet lethargy of pleaſure; yet in the intervals of his fits, his virtue alarmed and rouzed him, and brought the image of poor injured Amelia to haunt and torment him. In fact, if we regard this world only, it is the intereſt of every man to be either perfectly good, or completely bad. He had better deſtroy his conſcience, than gently wound it. The many bitter reflections which every bad action coſts a mind in which there are any remains of goodneſs, are not to be compenſated by the higheſt pleaſure which ſuch an action can produce.

So it happened to Mr. Booth. Repentance never failed to follow his tranſgreſſions; and yet ſo perverſe is our judgement, and ſo ſlippery is the deſcent of vice, when once we are entered into it; the ſame crime which he now repented of, became a reaſon for doing that which was to cauſe his future repentance; and he continued to ſin on, becauſe he had begun. His repentance however returned ſtill heavier and heavier, till at laſt it flung him into a melancholy, which Miſs Matthews plainly perceived, and at which ſhe could not avoid expreſſing ſome reſentment in obſcure hints, and ironical compliments on Amelia's ſuperiority to her whole ſex, who could not cloy a gay young fellow

by many years possession. She would then repeat the compliments which others had made to her own beauty ------and could not forbear once crying out, 'Upon my 'soul, my dear Billy! I believe the chief disadvantage 'on my side is in my superior fondness; for love, in 'the minds of men, hath one quality at least of a fever, 'which is to prefer coldness in the object. Confess, 'dear Will, is there not something vastly refreshing in 'the cool air of a prude?' Booth fetched a deep sigh, and begged her never more to mention Amelia's name. 'Will,' cries she, 'did that request proceed from the 'motive I could wish, I should be the happiest of wo-'mankind!'---'You would not sure, Madam,' said Booth, 'desire a sacrifice, which I must be a villain to 'make to any?'---'Desire!' answered she; 'are there 'any bounds to the desires of love! have not I been 'sacrificed? hath not my first love been torn from 'my bleeding heart? I claim a prior right------As 'for sacrifices, I can make them too! and would 'sacrifice the whole world at the least call of my love.'

Here she delivered a letter to Booth, which she had received within an hour, the contents of which were these:

"DEAREST MADAM,

"THOSE only who truly know what love is, can "have any conception of the horrors I felt at "hearing of your confinement at my arrival in town, "which was this morning. I immediately sent my "lawyer to enquire into the particulars, who brought "me the agreeable news that the man whose heart's "blood ought not to be valued at the rate of a single "hair of yours, is entirely out of all danger, and that "you might be admitted to bail. I presently ordered "him to go with two of my tradesmen, who are to be "bound in any sum for your appearance, if he should "be mean enough to prosecute you. Though you "may expect my attorney with you soon, I would not "delay sending this, as I hope the news will be agree-

"able

"able to you. My chariot will attend at the same "time to carry you wherever you please. You may "easily guess what a violence I have done to myself in "not waiting on you in person; but I, who know "your delicacy, feared it might offend, and that you "might think me ungenerous enough to hope from "your distresses an happiness, which I am resolved to "owe to your free gift alone; when your good-nature "shall induce you to bestow on me what no man li- "ving can merit. I beg you will pardon all the con- "tents of this hasty letter, and do me the honour of "believing me, dearest Madam, your most passionate "admirer, and most obedient humble servant,

"DAMON."

Booth thought he had somewhere before seen the same hand; but, in his present hurry of spirits, could not recollect whose it was: nor did the lady give him any time for reflection; for he had scarce read the letter, when she produced a little bit of paper, and cried out---'Here, Sir; here are the contents which he fears 'will offend me.' She then put a bank-bill of a hundred pounds into Mr. Booth's hands, and asked him with a smile, if he did not think she had reason to be offended with so much insolence.

Before Booth could return an answer, the governor arrived, and introduced Mr. Rogers the attorney, who acquainted the lady, that he brought her discharge from her confinement, and that a chariot waited at the door to attend her wherever she pleased.

She received the discharge from Mr. Rogers, and said she was very much obliged to the gentleman who employed him, but that she would not make use of the chariot, as she had no notion of leaving that place in a triumphant manner; in which resolution, when the attorney found her obstinate, he withdrew, as did the governor with many bows, and as many ladyships.

They were no sooner gone, than Booth asked the lady why she would refuse the chariot of a gentleman who had

behaved

behaved with such excessive respect. She looked earnestly upon him, and cried---'How unkind is that question! Do you imagine I would go and leave you in 'such a situation? Thou knowest but little of Calista. 'Why, do you think I would accept this hundred 'pounds from a man I dislike, unless it was to be serviceable to the man I love? I insist on your taking 'it as your own, and using whatever you want of 'it.'

Booth protested in the solemnest manner, that he would not touch a shilling of it; saying, he had already received too many obligations at her hands, and more than ever he should be able, he feared, to repay. 'How 'unkind,' answered she, 'is every word you say! 'Why will you mention obligations? Love never confers any. It doth every thing for its own sake. I am 'not therefore obliged to the man whose passion makes 'him generous: for I feel how inconsiderable the whole 'world would appear to me, if I could throw it after 'my heart.'

Much more of this kind passed; she still pressing the bank-note upon him, and he as absolutely refusing, till Booth left the lady to dress herself, and went to walk in the area of the prison.

Miss Matthews now applied to the governor, to know by what means she might procure the captain his liberty. The governor answered, 'As he cannot get bail, it will 'be a difficult matter; and money to be sure there must 'be: for people, no doubt, expect to touch on these 'occasions. When prisoners have not wherewithal as 'the law requires to entitle themselves to justice, why 'they must be beholden to other people, to give them 'their liberty; and people will not, to be sure, suffer 'others to be beholden to them for nothing, whereof 'there is good reason; for how should we all live, if it 'was not for these things!'---'Well, well,' said she, 'and how much will it cost?'---How much!' answered he; 'how much! Why, let me see---.' Here he hesitated

ſitated ſome time, and then anſwered, that for five guineas he would undertake to procure the captain his diſcharge---that being the ſum which he computed to remain in the lady's pocket; for as to the gentleman's, he had long been acquainted with the emptineſs of it.

Miſs Matthews, to whom money was as dirt, (indeed ſhe may be thought not to have known the value of it) delivered him the bank-bill, and bid him get it changed: 'For if the whole,' ſays ſhe, 'will procure 'him his liberty, he ſhall have it this evening.'

'The whole, Madam!' anſwered the governor, as ſoon as he had recovered his breath; for it almoſt forſook him at the ſight of the black word *hundred*. 'No, 'no. There might be people indeed-----but I am not 'one of thoſe. A hundred! no, nor nothing like it. As 'for myſelf, as I ſaid, I will be content with five gui'neas, and I am ſure that's little enough. What 'other people will expect, I cannot exactly ſay. To 'be ſure, his worſhip's clerk will expect to touch 'pretty handſomely. As for his worſhip himſelf, he 'never touches any thing, that is, not to ſpeak of. 'But then the conſtable will expect ſomething, and the 'watchman muſt have ſomething, and the lawyers on 'both ſides, they muſt have their fees for finiſhing.'--- 'Well,' ſaid ſhe, 'I leave all to you. If it coſts me 'twenty pounds, I will have him diſcharged this af'ternoon. But you muſt give his diſcharge into my 'hands, without letting the captain know any thing of 'the matter.'

The governor promiſed to obey her commands in every particular; nay, he was ſo very induſtrious, that though dinner was juſt then coming upon the table, at her earneſt requeſt he ſet out immediately on the purpoſe, and went, as he ſaid, in purſuit of the lawyer.

All the other company aſſembled at the table as uſual, where poor Booth was the only perſon out of ſpirits. This was imputed by all preſent to a wrong cauſe; nay, Miſs Matthews herſelf either could not, or

or would not, ſuſpect that there was any thing deeper than the deſpair of being ſpeedily diſcharged, that lay heavy on his mind.

However, the mirth of the reſt, and a pretty liberal quantity of punch, which he ſwallowed after dinner, (for Miſs Matthews had ordered a very large bowl at her own expence, to entertain the good company at her farewell) ſo far exhilarated his ſpirits, that when the young lady and he retired to their tea, he had all the marks of gaity in his countenance, and his eyes ſparkled with good-humour.

The gentleman and lady had ſpent about two hours in tea and converſation, when the governor returned, and privately delivered to the lady the diſcharge for her friend, and the ſum of eighty-two pounds five ſhillings; the reſt having been, he ſaid, diſburſed in the buſineſs, of which he was ready at any time to render an exact account.

Miſs Matthews being again alone with Mr. Booth, ſhe put the diſcharge into his hands, deſiring him to aſk her no queſtions; and adding, ‘ I think, Sir, we have ‘ neither of us now any thing more do at this place.’ She then ſummoned the governor, and ordered a bill of that day's expence, for long ſcores were not uſual there; and at the ſame time ordered a hackney-coach, without having yet determined whither ſhe would go: but fully determined ſhe was, wherever ſhe went, to take Mr. Booth with her.

The governor was now approaching with a long roll of paper, when a faint voice was heard to cry out haſtily---‘ Where is he ?’ And preſently a female ſpectre, all pale and breathleſs, ruſhed into the room, and fell into Mr. Booth's arms, where ſhe immediately fainted away.

Booth made ſhift to ſupport his lovely burden, though he was himſelf in a condition very little different from her's. Miſs Matthews, who preſently recollected the face of Amelia, was ſtruck motionleſs with the ſurpriz;

prize; nay, the governor himself, though not easily moved at sights of horror, stood aghast, and neither offered to speak nor stir.

Happily for Amelia, the governess of the mansions had, out of curiosity, followed her into the room, and was the only useful person present on this occasion: she immediately called for water, ran to the lady's assistance, fell to loosening her stays, and performed all the offices proper at such a season; which had so good an effect, that Amelia soon recovered the disorder which the violent agitation of her spirits had caused, and found herself alive and awake in her husband's arms.

Some tender caresses, and a soft whisper or two, passed privately between Booth and his lady; nor was it without great difficulty that poor Amelia put some restraint on her fondness, in a place so improper for a tender interview. She now cast her eyes round the room, and fixing them on Miss Matthews, who stood like a statue, she soon recollected her; and addressing her by her name, said----'Sure, Madam, I cannot be 'mistaken in those features; though meeting you here 'might almost make me suspect my memory!'

Miss Matthews's face was now all covered with scarlet. The reader may easily believe she was on no account pleased with Amelia's presence; indeed she expected from her some of those insults of which virtuous women are generally so liberal to a frail sister: but she was mistaken; Amelia was not one

Who thought the nation ne'er could thrive,
Till all the whores were burnt alive.

Her virtue could support itself with it's own intrinsic worth, without borrowing any assistance from the vices of other women; and she considered their natural infirmities as the objects of pity, not of contempt or abhorrence.

When Amelia, therefore, perceived the visible confusion in Miss Matthews, she presently called to remembrance

brance some stories which she had imperfectly heard; for, as she was not naturally attentive to scandal, and had kept very little company since her return to England, she was far from being a mistress of the lady's whole history. However, she had heard enough to impute her confusion to the right cause: she advanced to her, and told her she was extremely sorry to meet her in such a place, but hoped that no very great misfortune was the occasion of it.

Miss Matthews began, by degrees, to recover her spirits. She answered, with a reserved air---' I am ' much obliged to you, Madam, for your concern: we ' are all liable to misfortunes in this world. Indeed, I ' know not why I should be much ashamed of being ' in any place where I am in such good company.'

Here Booth interposed. He had before acquainted Amelia in a whisper, that his confinement was at an end. ' The unfortunate accident, my dear,' said he, ' which brought this young lady to this melancholy ' place is entirely determined; and she is now as abso' lutely at her liberty as myself.'

Amelia imputing the extreme coldness and reserve of the lady to the cause already mentioned, advanced still more and more in proportion as she drew back; till the governor, who had withdrawn some time, returned, and acquainted Miss Matthews that her coach was at the door; upon which, the company soon separated. Amelia and Booth went together in Amelia's coach, and poor Miss Matthews was obliged to retire alone, after having satisfied the demands of the governor, which in one day only had amounted to a pretty considerable sum; for he with great dexterity proportioned his bills to the ability of his guests.

It may seem, perhaps, wonderful to some readers, that Miss Matthews should have maintained that cold reserve towards Amelia, so as barely to keep within the rules of civility, instead of embracing an opportunity which seemed to offer of gaining some degree of intimacy

with a wife, whose husband she was so fond of; but besides that her spirits were entirely disconcerted by so sudden and unexpected a disappointment; and besides the extreme horrors which she conceived at the presence of her rival, there is, I believe, something so outrageously suspicious in the nature of all vice, especially when joined with any great degree of pride, that the eyes of those whom we imagine privy to our failings, are intolerable to us, and we are apt to aggravate their opinions to our disadvantage far beyond the reality.

CHAP. III.

Containing wise Observations of the Author, and other Matters.

THERE is nothing more difficult than to lay down any fixed and certain rules for happiness; or indeed to judge with any precision of the happiness of others, from the knowledge of external circumstances. There is sometimes a little speck of black in the brightest and gayest colours of Fortune, which contaminates and deadens the whole. On the contrary, when all without looks dark and dismal, there is often a secret ray of light within the mind, which turns every thing to real joy and gladness.

I have in the course of my life seen many occasions to make this observation; and Mr. Booth was at present a very pregnant instance of it's truth. He was just delivered from a prison, and in the possession of his beloved wife and children; and (which might be imagined greatly to augment his joy) Fortune had done all this for him within an hour, without giving him the least warning or reasonable expectation of this strange reverse in his circumstances; and yet it is certain, that there were very few men in the world more seriously miserable than he was at this instant. A deep melancholy seized his mind, and cold damp sweats overspread his person, so that he was scarce animated; and poor Amelia, instead of a fond, warm husband, bestowed her caresses on a dull, lifeless lump of clay. He endea-

voured, however, at firſt, as much as poſſible, to conceal what he felt, and attempted, what is the hardeſt of all taſks, to act the part of a happy man; but he found no ſupply of ſpirits to carry on this deceit, and would have probably ſunk under this attempt, had not poor Amelia's ſimplicity helped him to another fallacy, in which he had much better ſucceſs.

This worthy woman very plainly perceived the diſorder in her huſband's mind; and having no doubt of the cauſe of it, eſpecially when ſhe ſaw the tears ſtand in his eyes at the ſight of his children, threw her arms round his neck, and embracing him with rapturous fondneſs, cried out, 'My dear Billy, let nothing 'make you uneaſy. Heaven will, I doubt not, pro'vide for me and theſe poor babes. Great fortunes 'are not neceſſary to happineſs. For my own part, I 'can level my mind with any ſtate; and for thoſe poor 'little things, whatever condition of life we breed 'them to, that will be ſufficient to maintain them in. 'How many thouſands abound in affluence, whoſe for'tunes are much lower than ours! for it is not from 'nature, but from education and habit, that our wants 'are chiefly derived. Make yourſelf eaſy, therefore, 'my dear love; for you have a wife who will think 'herſelf happy with you, and endeavour to make you 'ſo, in any ſituation. Fear nothing, Billy: induſtry 'will always provide us a wholeſome meal; and I will 'take care that neatneſs and chearfulneſs ſhall make it 'a pleaſant one.'

Booth preſently took the cue which ſhe had given him. He fixed his eyes on her for a minute, with great earneſtneſs and inexpreſſible tenderneſs; and then cried, 'O my Amelia, how much are you my ſuperior in 'every perfection! how wiſe, how great, how noble, 'are your ſentiments! Why can I not imitate what I 'ſo much admire? Why can I not look with your 'conſtancy on thoſe dear little pledges of our loves? 'All my philoſophy is baffled with the thought, that

'my Amelia's children are to struggle with a cruel, 'hard, unfeeling world, and to buffet those waves of 'fortune which have overwhelmed their father. Here, 'I own, I want your firmness, and am not without an 'excuse for wanting it, for am I not the cruel cause of 'all your wretchedness? Have I not stept in between 'you and fortune, and been the cursed obstacle to all 'your greatness and happiness.'

'Say not so, my love,' answered she. 'Great I 'might have been, but never happy with any other 'man. Indeed, dear Billy, I laugh at the fears you 'formerly raised in me; what seemed so terrible at a 'distance, now it approaches nearer, appears to have 'been a mere bug-bear---and let this comfort you, 'that I look upon myself at this day as the happiest of 'women; nor have I done any thing which I do not 'rejoice in, and would, if I had the gift of prescience, 'do again.

Booth was so overcome with this behaviour, that he had no words to answer. To say the truth, it was difficult to find any worthy of the occasion. He threw himself prostrate at her feet, whence poor Amelia was forced to use all her strength, as well as her entreaties, to raise and replace him in his chair.

Such is ever the fortitude of perfect innocence, and such the depression of guilt in minds not utterly abandoned. Booth was naturally of a sanguine temper; nor would any such apprehensions as he mentioned have been sufficient to have restrained his joy at meeting with his Amelia. In fact, a reflection on the injury he had done her was the sole cause of his grief. This it was that enervated his heart, and threw him into agonies which all that profusion of heroic tenderness that the most excellent of women intended for his comfort, served only to heighten and aggravate; as the more she rose in his admiration, the more she quickened his sense of his own unworthiness.

After a disagreeable evening, the first of that kind

that he had ever paſſed with his Amelia, in which he had the utmoſt difficulty to force a little chearfulneſs, and in which her ſpirits were at length overpowered by diſcerning the oppreſſion on his, they retired to reſt, or rather to miſery, which need not be deſcribed.

The next morning at breakfaſt, Booth began to recover a little from his melancholy, and to taſte the company of his children. He now firſt thought of enquiring of Amelia, by what means ſhe had diſcovered the place of his confinement. Amelia, after gently rebuking him for not having himſelf acquainted her with it, informed him, that it was known all over the country, and that ſhe had traced the original of it to her ſiſter, who had ſpread the news with a malicious joy, and added a circumſtance which would have frightened her to death, had not her knowledge of him made her give little credit to it, which was, that he was committed for murder. But though ſhe had diſcredited this part, ſhe ſaid, the not hearing from him, during ſeveral ſucceſſive poſts, made her too apprehenſive of the reſt. That ſhe got a conveyance, therefore, for herſelf and children to Saliſbury, from whence the ſtage-coach had brought them to town; and having depoſited the children at his lodging, of which he had ſent her an account on his firſt arrival in town, ſhe took a hack, and came directly to the priſon where ſhe heard he was, and where ſhe found him.

Booth excuſed himſelf, and with truth, as to his not having writ: for in fact he had writ twice from the priſon, though he had mentioned nothing of his confinement; but as he ſent away his letters after nine at night, the fellow to whom they were entruſted had burnt them for the ſake of putting the two-pence in his own pocket, or rather in the pocket of the keeper of the next gin-ſhop.

As to the account which Amelia gave him, it ſerved rather to raiſe than to ſatisfy his curioſity. He began to ſuſpect, that ſome perſon had ſeen both him and Miſs

Miss Matthews together in the prison, and had confounded her case with his; and this the circumstance of murder made the more probable. But who this person should be, he could not guess. After giving himself therefore some pains in forming conjectures to no purpose, he was forced to rest contented with his ignorance of the real truth.

Two or three days now passed without producing any thing remarkable; unless it were, that Booth more and more recovered his spirits, and had now almost regained his former degree of chearfulness, when the following letter arrived again to torment him:

'DEAR BILLY,

'TO convince you I am the most reasonable of women, I have given you up three whole days to 'the unmolested possession of my fortunate rival; I can 'refrain no longer from letting you know that I lodge 'in Dean-Street, not far from the church, at the sign of 'the Pelican and Trumpet; where I expect this evening to see you. Believe me, I am with more affection 'than any other woman in the world can be, my dear 'Billy, your affectionate, fond, doating,

'F. MATTHEWS.'

Booth tore the letter with rage, and threw it into the fire, resolving never to visit the lady more, unless it was to pay her the money she had lent him, which he was determined to do the very first opportunity: for it was not at present in his power.

This letter threw him back into his fit of dejection, in which he had not continued long, when a packet from the country brought him the following from his friend Dr. Harrison.

'Lyons, Jan. 21. N. S.

'SIR,

'THOUGH I am now on my return home, I have 'taken up my pen to communicate to you some 'news I have heard from England, which gives me 'much uneasiness, and concerning which I can indeed

'deliver my sentiments with much more eafe this way 'than any other. In my anfwer to your laft, I freely 'gave you my opinion, in which it was my misfortune 'to difapprove of every ftep you had taken; but thofe 'were all pardonable errors. Can you be fo partial to 'yourfelf, upon cool and fober reflection, to think what 'I am going to mention is fo? I promife you, it appears 'to me a folly of fo monftrous a kind, that had I heard 'it from any but a perfon of the higheft honour, I 'fhould have rejected it as utterly incredible. I hope 'you already guefs what I am about to name; fince 'Heaven forbid your conduct fhould afford you any 'choice of fuch grofs inftances of weaknefs! In a word, 'then, you have fet up an equipage. What fhall I in-'vent in your excufe, either to others, or to myfelf? In 'truth I can find no excufe for you; and, what is more, 'I am certain you can find none for yourfelf. I muft 'deal therefore very plainly and fincerely with you. 'Vanity is always contemptible; but when joined with 'difhonefty, it becomes odious and deteftable. At 'whofe expence are you to fupport this equipage? Is it 'not entirely at the expence of others; and will it not 'finally end in that of your poor wife and children? 'You know you are two years in arrears to me. If I 'could impute this to any extraordinary or common 'accident, I think I fhould never have mentioned it; 'but I will not fuffer my money to fupport the ridicu-'lous, and, I muft fay, criminal vanity of any one. 'I expect therefore to find at my return, that you have 'either difcharged my whole debt, or your equipage. 'Let me beg you ferioufly to confider your circum-'ftances and condition in life, and to remember that 'your fituation will not juftify any the leaft unnecef-'fary expence. "Simply to be poor," fays my fa-'vourite Greek hiftorian, "was not held fcandalous "by the wife Athenians; but highly fo, to owe that "poverty to our own indifcretion." Present my affec-'tions to Mrs. Booth; and be affured, that I fhall

'not,

'not, without great reason, and great pain too, ever 'cease to be,

'Your most faithful friend,

'R. HARRISON.'

Had this letter come at any other time, it would have given Booth the most sensible affliction; but so totally had the affair of Miss Matthews possessed his mind, that, like a man in a most raging fit of the gout, he was scarce capable of any additional torture; nay, he even made an use of this latter epistle, as it served to account to Amelia for that concern which he really felt on another account. The poor deceived lady therefore applied herself to give him comfort where he least wanted it. She said he might easily perceive that the matter had been misrepresented to the doctor, who would not, she was sure, retain the least anger against him when he knew the real truth.

After a short conversation on this subject, in which Booth appeared to be greatly consoled by the arguments of his wife, they parted. He went to take a walk in the Park, and she remained at home to prepare him his dinner.

He was no sooner departed, than his little boy, not quite six years old, said to Amelia, 'La! mamma, 'what is the matter with my poor papa? what makes 'him look so as if he was going to cry? He is not 'half so merry as he used to be in the country.' Amelia answered, 'Oh! my dear! your papa is only a 'little thoughtful; he will be merry again soon.' Then looking fondly on her children, she burst into an agony of tears, and cried, 'Oh, heavens! what have 'these poor little infants done? Why will the barbarous 'world endeavour to starve them, by depriving us of 'our only friend?---O, my dear, your father is 'ruined, and we are undone.' The children presently accompanied their mother's tears: and the daughter cried, 'Why, will any body hurt poor papa? hath he 'done any harm to any body?'---'No, my dear child,' said

ſaid the mother, ‘ he is the beſt man in the world, and ‘ therefore they hate him.’ Upon which the boy, who was extremely ſenſible at his years, anſwered, ‘ Nay, ‘ mamma, how can that be? Have not you often ‘ told me, that if I was good every body would love ‘ me?’---‘ All good people will,’ anſwered ſhe. ‘ Why ‘ don't they love papa, then?’ replied the child; ‘ for ‘ I am ſure he is very good?’---‘ So they do my dear,’ ſaid the mother; ‘ but there are more bad people in ‘ the world, and they will hate you for your goodneſs.’ ---‘ Why then bad people,’ cries the child, ‘ are loved ‘ by more than the good.’----‘ No matter for that, ‘ my dear,’ ſaid ſhe; ‘ the love of one good perſon is ‘ more worth having, than that of a thouſand wicked ‘ ones: nay, if there was no ſuch perſon in the world, ‘ ſtill you muſt be a good boy; for there is one ‘ in Heaven who will love you, and his love is better ‘ for you than that of all mankind.’

This little dialogue, we are apprehenſive, will be read with contempt by many; indeed we ſhould not have thought it worth recording, was it not for the excellent example which Amelia here gives to all mothers. This admirable woman never let a day paſs, without inſtructing her children in ſome leſſon of religion and morality. By which means ſhe had, in their tender minds, ſo ſtrongly annexed the ideas of fear and ſhame to every idea of evil of which they were ſuſceptible, that it muſt require great pains and length of habit to ſeparate them. Though ſhe was the tendereſt of mothers, ſhe never ſuffered any ſymptom of malevolence to ſhew itſelf in their moſt trifling actions without diſcouragement, without rebuke; and, if it broke forth with any rancour, without puniſhment. In which ſhe had ſuch ſucceſs, that not the leaſt mark of pride, envy, malice, or ſpite, diſcovered itſelf in any of their little words or deeds.

CHAP. IV.

In which Amelia appears in no unamiable Light.

AMELIA, with the assistance of a little girl, who was their only servant, had dressed her dinner; and she had likewise dressed herself as neat as any lady who had a regular set of servants could have done; when Booth returned, and brought with him his friend James, whom he had met with in the park; and who, as Booth absolutely refused to dine away from his wife, to whom he had promised to return, had invited himself to dine with him. Amelia had none of that paultry pride, which possesses so many of her sex, and which disconcerts their tempers, and gives them the airs and looks of furies, if their husbands bring in an unexpected guest, without giving them timely warning to provide a sacrifice to their own vanity. Amelia received her husband's friend with the utmost complaisance and good humour: she made indeed some apology for the homeliness of her dinner; but it was politely turned as a compliment to Mr. James's friendship, which could carry him where he was sure of being so ill entertained; and gave not the least hint how magnificently she would have provided, *had she expected the favour of so much good company.* A phrase which is generally meant to contain not only an apology for the lady of the house, but a tacit satire on her guests for their intrusion, and is at least a strong insinuation that they are not welcome.

Amelia failed not to enquire very earnestly after her old friend Mrs. James, formerly Miss Bath, and was very sorry to find that she was not in town. The truth was, as James had married out of a violent liking of, or appetite to, her person, possession had surfeited him, and he was now grown so heartily tired of his wife, that she had very little of his company; she was forced therefore to content herself with being the mistress of a large house and equipage in the country, ten months in the year by herself. The other two he indulged her

with the diversions of the town; but then, though they lodged under the same roof, she had little more of her husband's society, than if they had been one hundred miles apart. With all this, as she was a woman of calm passions, she made herself contented; for she had never had any violent affection for James; the match was of the prudent kind, and to her advantage: for his fortune, by the death of an uncle, was become very considerable; and she had gained every thing by the bargain, but a husband, which her constitution suffered her to be very well satisfied without.

When Amelia, after dinner, retired to her children, James began to talk to his friend concerning his affairs. He advised Booth very earnestly to think of getting into the army, in which he himself had met with such success, that he had obtained the command of a regiment, to which his brother-in-law was lieutenant-colonel. These preferments they both owed to the favour of fortune only: for though there was no objection to either of their military characters, yet neither of them had any extraordinary desert; and if merit in the service was a sufficient recommendation, Booth, who had been twice wounded in the siege, seemed to have the fairest pretensions; but he remained a poor half-pay lieutenant, and the others were, as we have said, one of them a lieutenant-colonel, and the other had a regiment. Such rises we often see in life, without being able to give any satisfactory account of the means, and therefore ascribe them to the good fortune of the person.

Both Colonel James and his brother-in-law were members of parliament: for as the uncle of the former had left him, together with his estate, an almost certain interest in a borough, so he chose to confer this favour on Colonel Bath; a circumstance which would have been highly immaterial to mention here, but as it serves to set forth the goodness of James, who endeavoured to make up in kindness to the family, what he wanted in fondness for his wife.

Colonel

Colonel James then endeavoured all in his power to persuade Booth to think again of a military life, and very kindly offered him his interest towards obtaining him a company in the regiment under his command. Booth must have been a madman in his present circumstances to have hesitated one moment at accepting such an offer; and he well knew Amelia, notwithstanding her aversion to the army, was much too wise to make the least scruple of giving her consent. Nor was he, as it appeared afterwards, mistaken in his opinion of his wife's understanding: for she made not the least objection when it was communicated to her, but contented herself with an express stipulation, that wherever he was commanded to go, (for the regiment was now abroad) she would accompany him.

Booth therefore accepted his friend's proposal with a profusion of acknowledgments; and it was agreed, that Booth should draw up a memorial of his pretensions, which Colonel James undertook to present to some man of power, and to back it with all the force he had.

Nor did the friendship of the colonel stop here. 'You will excuse me, dear Booth,' said he, 'if after 'what you have told me,' (for he had been very explicit in revealing his affairs to him) 'I suspect you 'must want money at this time. If that be the case, 'as I am certain it must be, I have fifty pieces at your 'service.' This generosity brought the tears into Booth's eyes; and he at length confessed, that he had not five guineas in the house; upon which James gave him a bank-bill for twenty pounds, and said he would give him thirty more the next time he saw him.

Thus did this generous colonel (for generous he really was to the highest degree) restore peace and comfort to this little family; and, by this act of beneficence, make two of the worthiest people two of the happiest that evening.

Here, reader, give me leave to stop a minute, to lament that so few are to be found of this benign disposition!

tion; that while wantonneſs, vanity, avarice and ambition, are every day rioting and triumphing in the follies and weakneſs, the ruin and deſolation of mankind, ſcarce one man in a thouſand is capable of taſting the happineſs of others. Nay, give me leave to wonder that pride, which is conſtantly ſtruggling, and often impoſing on itſelf to gain ſome little pre-eminence, ſhould ſo ſeldom hint to us the only certain as well as laudable way of ſetting ourſelves above another man; and that is, by becoming his benefactor.

CHAP. V.

Containing an Eulogium upon Innocence, and other grave Matters.

BOOTH paſſed that evening, and all the ſucceeding day, with his Amelia, without the interruption of almoſt a ſingle thought concerning Miſs Matthews, after having determined to go on the Sunday, the only day he could venture without the verge in the preſent ſtate of his affairs, and pay her what ſhe had advanced for him in the priſon. But ſhe had not ſo long patience; for the third day, while he was ſitting with Amelia, a letter was brought to him. As he knew the hand, he immediately put it in his pocket unopened, not without ſuch an alteration in his countenance, that had Amelia, who was then playing with one of the children, caſt her eyes towards him, ſhe muſt have remarked it. This accident, however, luckily gave him time to recover himſelf: for Amelia was ſo deeply engaged with the little one, that ſhe did not even remark the delivery of the letter. The maid ſoon after returned into the room, ſaying, the chairman deſired to know if there was any anſwer to the letter. 'What letter?' cries Booth. 'The letter I gave you juſt now,' anſwered 'the girl. 'Sure,' cries Booth, 'the child is mad; 'you gave me no letter.'---'Yes, indeed I did, Sir,' 'ſaid the poor girl. 'Why then, as ſure as fate,' cries 'Booth, I threw it into the fire in my reverie. Why, 'child, why did you not tell me it was a letter? Bid

'the chairman come up---ſtay, I will go down myſelf; 'for he will otherwiſe dirt the ſtairs with his feet.'

Amelia was gently chiding the girl for her careleſſneſs; when Booth returned, ſaying, it was very true that ſhe had delivered him a letter from Colonel James, and that perhaps it might be of conſequence. 'However,' ſays he, 'I will ſtep to the coffee-houſe, and 'ſend him an account of this ſtrange accident, which I 'know he will pardon in my preſent ſituation.'

Booth was overjoyed at this eſcape, which poor Amelia's total want of all jealouſy and ſuſpicion made it very eaſy for him to accompliſh: but his pleaſure was conſiderably abated, when upon opening the letter, he found it to contain, mixed with ſeveral very ſtrong expreſſions of love, ſome pretty warm ones of the upbraiding kind; but what moſt alarmed him was, a hint that it was in her power (Miſs Matthews's) to make Amelia as miſerable as herſelf. Beſides, the general knowledge of

------*Furens quid fœmina poſſit,*

he had more particular reaſons to apprehend the rage of a lady who had given ſo ſtrong an inſtance how far ſhe could carry her revenge. She had already ſent a chairman to his lodgings, with a poſitive command not to return without an anſwer to her letter. This might of itſelf have poſſibly occaſioned a diſcovery; and he thought he had great reaſon to fear, that if ſhe did not carry matters ſo far as purpoſely and avowedly to reveal the ſecret to Amelia, her indiſcretion would at leaſt effect the diſcovery of that which he would at any price have concealed. Under theſe terrors, he might, I believe, be conſidered as the moſt wretched of human beings.

O innocence, how glorious and happy a portion art thou to the breaſt that poſſeſſes thee! thou feareſt neither the eyes nor the tongues of men. Truth, the moſt powerful of all things, is thy ſtrongeſt friend; and the brighter the light is in which thou art diſplayed, the

the more it discovers thy transcendent beauties. Guilt, on the contrary, like a base thief, suspects every eye that beholds him to be privy to his transgressions, and every tongue that mentions his name, to be proclaiming them. Fraud and falshood are his weak and treacherous allies; and he lurks trembling in the dark; dreading every ray of light, lest it should discover him, and give him up to shame and punishment.

While Booth was walking in the Park with all these horrors in his mind, he again met his friend Colonel James, who soon took notice of that deep concern which the other was incapable of hiding. After some little conversation, Booth said, 'My dear colonel, I am 'sure I must be the most insensible of men, if I did not 'look on you as the best and the truest friend; I will, 'therefore, without scruple, repose a confidence in you 'of the highest kind. I have often made you privy to 'my necessities, I will now acquaint you with my 'shame, provided you have leisure enough to give me 'a hearing: for I must open to you a long history, 'since I will not reveal my fault, without informing 'you, at the same time, of those circumstances which, 'I hope, will in some measure excuse it.'

The colonel very readily agreed to give his friend a patient hearing. So they walked directly to a coffee-house at the corner of Spring Garden, where, being in a room by themselves, Booth opened his whole heart, and acquainted the colonel with his amour with Miss Matthews from the very beginning, to his receiving that letter which had caused all his present uneasiness, and which he now delivered into his friend's hand.

The colonel read the letter very attentively twice over; (he was silent, indeed, long enough to have read it oftener:) and then turning to Booth, said, 'Well, Sir; and is it so grievous a calamity, to be 'the object of a young lady's affection; especially of 'one whom you allow to be so extremely handsome?' ---'Nay, but my dear friend,' cries Booth, 'do not

'jest with me; you who know my Amelia.'---'Well, 'my dear friend,' answered James, 'and you know 'Amelia, and this lady too---but what would you 'have me do for you?'-----I would have you give me 'your advice,' says Booth, 'by what method I shall 'get rid of this dreadful woman without a discovery.' ---'And do you really,' cries the other, 'desire to get 'rid of her?'---'Can you doubt it,' says Booth, 'after 'what I have communicated to you, and after what 'you yourself have seen in my family? for I hope, 'notwithstanding this fatal slip, I do not appear to 'you in the light of a profligate.'---'Well,' answered James, 'and whatever light I may appear to you in, 'if you are really tired of the lady, and if she be 'really what you have represented her, I'll endeavour 'to take her off your hands; but I insist upon it, that 'you do not deceive me in any particular.' Booth protested in the most solemn manner, that every word which he had spoken was strictly true; and being asked whether he would give his honour never more to visit the lady, he assured James that he never would. He then, at his friend's request, delivered him Miss Matthews's letter, in which was a second direction to her lodgings; and declared to him, that if he could bring him safely out of this terrible affair, he should think himself to have a still higher obligation to his friendship, than any which he had already received from it.

Booth pressed the colonel to go home with him to dinner; but he excused himself, being, as he said, already engaged. However, he undertook in the afternoon to do all in his power, that Booth should receive no more alarms from the quarter of Miss Matthews, whom the colonel undertook to pay all the demands she had on his friend. They then separated: the colonel went to dinner at the King's Arms, and Booth returned in high spirits to meet his Amelia.

The next day, early in the morning, the colonel

came to the coffee-house, and sent for his friend, who lodged but at a little distance. The colonel told him he had a little exaggerated the lady's beauty; however, he said, he excused that: 'For you might think 'perhaps,' cries he, 'that your inconstancy to the 'finest woman in the world might want some excuse. 'Be that as it will,' said he, 'you may make yourself 'easy; as it will be, I am convinced, your own fault, 'if you have ever any farther molestation from Miss 'Matthews.'

Booth poured forth very warmly a great profusion of gratitude on this occasion; and nothing more any wise material passed at this interview, which was very short; the colonel being in a great hurry, as he had, he said, some business of very great importance to transact that morning.

The colonel had now seen Booth twice, without remembering to give him the thirty pounds. This the latter imputed entirely to forgetfulness; for he had always found the promises of the former to be equal in value with the notes or bonds of other people. He was more surprized at what happened the next day; when meeting his friend in the Park, he received only a cold salute from him; and though he passed him five or six times, and the colonel was walking with a single officer of no great rank, and with whom he seemed in no earnest conversation; yet could not Booth, who was alone, obtain any farther notice from him.

This gave the poor man some alarm; though he could scarce persuade himself there was any design in all this coldness or forgetfulness. Once he imagined that he had lessened himself in the colonel's opinion, by having discovered his inconstancy to Amelia; but the known character of the other presently cured him of this suspicion, for he was a perfect libertine with regard to women; that being indeed the principal blemish in his character, which otherwise might have deserved much commendation for good-nature, generosity, and

and friendship. But he carried this one to a most unpardonable height: and made no scruple of openly declaring, that if he ever liked a woman well enough to be uneasy on her account, he would cure himself, if he could, by enjoying her, whatever might be the consequence.

Booth could not therefore be persuaded that the colonel would so highly resent, in another, a fault of which he was himself most notoriously guilty. After much consideration, he could derive this behaviour from nothing better than a capriciousness in his friend's temper, from a kind of inconstancy of mind, which makes men grow weary of their friends, with no more reason than they often are of their mistresses. To say the truth, there are jilts in friendship as well as in love; and by the behaviour of some men in both, one would almost imagine that they industriously sought to gain the affections of others, with a view only of making the parties miserable.

This was the consequence of the colonel's behaviour to Booth. Former calamities had afflicted him; but this almost distracted him: and the more so, as he was not able well to account for such conduct, nor to conceive the least reason of it.

Amelia, at his return, presently perceived the disturbance in his mind, though he endeavoured with his utmost power to hide it; and he was at length prevailed upon by her entreaties to discover to her the cause of it; which she no sooner heard, than she applied as judicious a remedy to his disordered spirits, as either of those great mental physicians, Tully, or Aristotle, could have thought of. She used many arguments to persuade him that he was in an error; and had mistaken forgetfulness and carelessness for a designed neglect.

But as this physic was only eventually good, and as it's efficacy depended on her being in the right, a point in which she was not apt to be too positive, she

thought fit to add some consolation of a more certain and positive kind. 'Admit,' said she, 'my dear, 'that Mr. James should prove the unaccountable person you have suspected, and should, without being 'able to alledge any cause, withdraw his friendship 'from you, (for surely the accident of burning his 'letter is too trifling and ridiculous to mention) why 'should this grieve you? The obligations he hath 'conferred on you, I allow, ought to make his misfortunes almost your own; but they should not, I 'think, make you see his faults so very sensibly, especially when, by one of the greatest faults in the world 'committed against yourself, he hath considerably 'lessened all obligations: for sure, if the same person 'who hath contributed to my happiness at one time, 'doth every thing in his power maliciously and wantonly to make me miserable at another, I am very 'little obliged to such a person. And let it be a comfort to my dear Billy, that however other friends 'may prove false and fickle to him, he hath one friend, 'whom no inconstancy of her own, nor any change of 'his fortune, nor time, nor age, nor sickness, nor any 'accident, can ever alter; but who will esteem, will 'love, and doat on him for ever.' So saying, she flung her snowy arms about his neck, and gave him a caress so tender, that it seemed almost to balance all the malice of his fate.

And, indeed, the behaviour of Amelia would have made him compleatly happy, in defiance of all adverse circumstances, had it not been for those bitter ingredients which he himself had thrown into his cup; and which prevented him from truly relishing Amelia's sweetness, by cruelly reminding him how unworthy he was of this excellent creature.

Booth did not long remain in the dark as to the conduct of James, which, at first, appeared to him to be so great a mystery; for this very afternoon he received a letter from Miss Matthews, which unravelled the

whole affair. By this letter, which was full of bitterness and upbraiding, he discovered that James was his rival with that lady, and was, indeed, the identical person who had sent the hundred pound note to Miss Matthews, when in the prison. He had reason to believe, likewise, as well by the letter as by other circumstances, that James had hitherto been an unsuccessful lover: for the lady, though she had forfeited all title to virtue, had not yet so far forfeited all pretensions to delicacy, as to be, like the dirt in the street, indifferently common to all. She distributed her favours only to those she liked, in which number that gentleman had not the happiness of being included.

When Booth had made this discovery, he was not so little versed in human nature, as any longer to hesitate at the true motive to the colonel's conduct; for he well knew how odious a sight a happy rival is to an unfortunate lover. I believe he was, in reality, glad to assign the cold treatment he had received from his friend, to a cause which, however unjustifiable, is, at the same time, highly natural; and to acquit him of a levity, fickleness, and caprice, which he must have been unwillingly obliged to have seen in a much worse light.

He now resolved to take the first opportunity of accosting the colonel, and of coming to a perfect explanation upon the whole matter. He debated likewise with himself, whether he should not throw himself at Amelia's feet, and confess a crime to her which he found so little hopes of concealing, and which he foresaw would occasion him so many difficulties and terrors to endeavour to conceal. Happy had it been for him, had he wisely pursued this step; since, in all probability, he would have received immediate forgiveness from the best of women! but he had not sufficient resolution; or, to speak, perhaps, more truly, he had too much pride to confess his guilt, and preferred the danger of the highest inconveniences to so certainty of being put to the blush.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

In which may appear, that Violence is ſometimes done to the Name of Love.

WHEN that happy day came in which unhallowed hands are forbidden to contaminate the ſhoulders of the unfortunate, Booth went early to the colonel's houſe; and being admitted to his preſence, began with great freedom, though with great gentleneſs, to complain of his not having dealt with him more openneſs. 'Why, 'my dear colonel,' ſaid he, 'would you not acquaint 'me with that ſecret which this letter hath diſcloſed?' James read the letter, at which his countenance changed more than once; and then, after a ſhort ſilence, ſaid, 'Mr. Booth, I have been to blame; I own it; and you 'upraid me with juſtice. The true reaſon was, that 'I was aſhamed of my own folly. D---n me, Booth! 'if I have not been a moſt conſummate fool, a very dupe 'to this woman; and ſhe hath a particular pleaſure in 'making me ſo. I know what the impertinence of vir'tue is, and I can ſubmit to it; but to be treated thus 'by a whore---you muſt forgive me, dear Booth; but 'your ſucceſs was a kind of triumph over me which I 'could not bear. I own, I have not the leaſt reaſon to 'conceive any anger againſt you; and yet, curſe me! 'if I ſhould not have been leſs diſpleaſed at your lying 'with my own wife; nay, I could almoſt have parted 'with half my fortune to you more willingly, than have 'ſuffered you to receive that trifle of my money which 'you received at her hands. However, I aſk your par'don; and I promiſe you, I will never more think of 'you with the leaſt ill-will on the account of this wo'man: but as for her, d---n me, if I do not enjoy her 'by ſome means or other, whatever it coſts me; for I 'am already above two hundred pounds out of pocket, 'without having ſcarce had a ſmile in return.'

Booth expreſſed much aſtoniſhment at this declaration; he ſaid he could not conceive how it was poſſible to have ſuch an affection for a woman, who did not ſhew the leaſt inclination to return it. James gave her a hearty

hearty curse; and said, 'Pox of her inclination! I 'want only the possession of her person; and that you 'will allow is a very fine one. But, besides my passion for her, she hath now piqued my pride; for how 'can a man of my fortune brook being refused by a 'whore?'---'Since you are set on the business,' cries Booth, '(you will excuse my saying so) I fancy you 'had better change your method of applying to her: 'for, as she is, perhaps, the vainest woman upon earth, 'your bounty may probably do you little service; nay, 'may rather actually disoblige her. Vanity is plainly 'her predominant passion, and if you will administer to 'that, it will infallibly throw her into your arms. To 'this I attribute my own unfortunate success. While 'she relieved my wants and distresses, she was daily 'feeding her own vanity; whereas, as every gift of 'yours asserted your superiority, it rather offended than 'pleased her. Indeed, women generally love to be of 'the obliging side; and if we examine their favourites, 'we shall find them to be much oftener such as they 'have conferred obligations on, than such as they have 'received them from.'

There was something in this speech which pleased the colonel; and he said with a smile, 'I don't know how 'it is, Will; but you know women better than I.'---'Perhaps, colonel,' answered Booth, 'I have studied 'their minds more.'---'I don't however much envy 'you your knowledge,' replied the other: 'for I never 'think their minds worth considering. However, I 'hope I shall profit a little by your experience with 'Miss Matthews. Damnation seize the proud insolent 'harlot! the devil take me, if I don't love her more than 'I ever loved a woman!'

The rest of their conversation turned on Booth's affairs. The colonel again re-assumed the part of a friend, gave him the remainder of the money, and promised to take the first opportunity of laying his memorial before a great man.

Booth was greatly overjoyed at this success. Nothing

now lay on his mind, but to conceal his frailty from Amelia, to whom he was afraid Miſs Matthews, in the rage of her reſentment, would communicate it. This apprehenſion made him ſtay almoſt conſtantly at home; and he trembled at every knock at the door. His fears moreover betrayed him into a meanneſs which he would have heartily deſpiſed on any other occaſion. This was, to order the maid to deliver him any letter directed to Amelia, at the ſame time ſtrictly charging her not to acquaint her miſtreſs with her having received any ſuch orders.

A ſervant of any acuteneſs would have formed ſtrange conjectures from ſuch an injunction; but this poor girl was of perfect ſimplicity: ſo great indeed was her ſimplicity, that had not Amelia been void of all ſuſpicion of her huſband, the maid would have ſoon after betrayed her maſter.

One afternoon while they were drinking tea, little Betty, ſo was the maid called, came into the room; and calling her maſter forth, delivered him a card which was directed to Amelia. Booth having read the card, on his return into the room, chid the girl for calling him, ſaying, 'If you can read, child, you muſt ſee it was 'directed to your miſtreſs.' To this the girl anſwered pertly enough: 'I am ſure, Sir, you ordered me to 'bring every letter firſt to you.' This hint, with many women, would have been ſufficient to have blown up the whole affair; but Amelia, who heard what the girl ſaid, through the medium of love and confidence, ſaw the matter in a much better light than it deſerved; and looking tenderly on her huſband, ſaid, 'Indeed, my 'love, I muſt blame you for a conduct, which perhaps, 'I ought rather to praiſe, as it proceeds only from the 'extreme tenderneſs of your affection. But why will 'you endeavour to keep any ſecrets from me! believe 'me, for my own ſake, you ought not: for as you 'cannot hide the conſequences, you make me always 'ſuſpect ten times worſe than the reality. While I 'have you and my children well before my eyes, I am ca-
'pable

'pable of facing any news which can arrive; for what ill 'news can come (unless, indeed, it concerns my little 'babe in the country) which doth not relate to the 'badness of our circumstances? and those, I thank 'Heaven, we have now a fair prospect of retrieving! 'Besides, dear Billy, though my understanding be 'much inferior to yours, I have sometimes had the 'happiness of luckily hitting on some argument which 'hath afforded you comfort. This you know, my dear, 'was the case with regard to Colonel James, whom I 'persuaded you to think you had mistaken; and you 'see the event proved me in the right.' So happily, both for herself and Mr. Booth, did the excellence of this good woman's disposition deceive her, and force her to see every thing in the most advantageous light to her husband.

The card being now inspected, was found to contain the compliments of Mrs. James to Mrs. Booth, with an account of her being arrived in town, and having brought with her a very great cold. Amelia was overjoyed with the news of her arrival; and having dressed herself in the utmost hurry, left her children in the care of her husband, and ran away to pay her respects to her friend, whom she loved with a most sincere affection. But how was she disappointed, when, eager with the utmost impatience, and exulting with the thoughts of presently seeing her beloved friend, she was answered at the door that the lady was not at home! nor could she, upon telling her name, obtain any admission. This, considering the account she had received of the lady's cold, greatly surprized her; and she returned home very much vexed at her disappointment.

Amelia, who had no suspicion that Mrs. James was really at home, and, as the phrase is, was denied, would have made a second visit the next morning, had she not been prevented by a cold, which she herself now got, and which was attended with a slight fever. This confined her several days to her house, during which Booth officiated as her nurse, and never stirred from her.

In all this time she heard not a word from Mrs. James, which gave her some uneasiness, but more astonishment. The tenth day, when she was perfectly recovered, about nine in the evening, when she and her husband were just going to supper, she heard a most violent thundering at the door, and presently after a rustling of silk upon her stair-case; at the same time a female voice cried out pretty loud, 'Bless me! what, 'am I to climb up another pair of stairs?' upon which Amelia, who well knew the voice, presently ran to the door, and ushered in Mrs. James most splendidly dressed; who put on as formal a countenance, and made as formal a curtsey to her old friend, as if she had been her very distant acquaintance.

Poor Amelia, who was going to rush into her friend's arms, was struck motionless by this behaviour; but recollecting her spirits, as she had an excellent presence of mind, she presently understood what the lady meant, and resolved to treat her in her own way. Down therefore the company sat, and silence prevailed for some time, during which Mrs. James surveyed the room with more attention than she would have bestowed on one much finer. At length the conversation began, in which the weather and the diversions of the town were well canvassed. Amelia, who was a woman of great humour, performed her part to admiration; so that a by-stander would have doubted, in every other article than dress, which of the two was the most accomplished fine lady.

After a visit of twenty minutes, during which not a word of any former occurrences was mentioned, nor indeed any subject of discourse started, except only those two abovementioned, Mrs. James rose from her chair, and retired in the same formal manner in which she had approached. We will pursue her, for the sake of the contrast, during the rest of the evening. She went from Amelia directly to a rout, where she spent two hours in a crowd of company, talked again and again over the diversions and news of the town, played two rubbers at whist,

whist, and then retired to her own apartment; where having passed another hour in undressing herself, she went to her own bed.

Booth and his wife, the moment their companion was gone, sat down to supper on a piece of cold meat, the remains of their dinner. After which, over a pint of wine, they entertained themselves for a while with the ridiculous behaviour of their visitant. But Amelia declaring she rather saw her as the object of pity than anger, turned the discourse to pleasanter topics. The little actions of their children, the former scenes and future prospects of their life, furnished them with many pleasant ideas, and the contemplation of Amelia's recovery threw Booth into raptures. At length they retired, happy in each other.

It is possible some readers may be no less surprized at the behaviour of Mrs. James, than was Amelia herself, since they may have perhaps received so favourable an impression of that lady from the account given of her by Mr. Booth, that her present demeanour may seem unnatural, and inconsistent with her former character. But they will be pleased to consider the great alteration in her circumstances, from a state of dependency on a brother, who was himself no better than a soldier of fortune, to that of being wife to a man of a very large estate, and considerable rank in life. And what was her present behaviour more than that of a fine lady, who considered form and show as essential ingredients of human happiness, and imagined all friendship to consist in ceremony, courtesies, messages, and visits? In which opinion she hath the honour to think with much the greater part of one sex, and no small number of the other.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a very extraordinary and pleasant Incident.

THE next evening Booth and Amelia went to walk in the Park with their children. They were now on the verge of the parade, and Booth was describing to his wife the several buildings round it; when, on a sud-

den, Amelia miffing her little boy, cried out, 'Where's 'little Billy?' upon which, Booth cafting his eyes over the grafs, faw a foot-foldier fhaking the boy at a little diftance. At this fight, without making any anfwer to his wife, he leaped over the rails; and running directly up to the fellow, who had a firelock with a bayonet fixed in his hand, he feized him by the collar, and tripped up his heels, and at the fame time wrefted his arms from him. A ferjeant upon duty feeing the affray at fome diftance, ran prefently up; and being told what had happened, gave the centinel a hearty curfe, and told him he deferved to be hanged. A by-ftander gave this information; for Booth was returned with his little boy to meet Amelia, who ftaggered towards him as faft as fhe could, all pale and breathlefs, and fcarce able to fupport her tottering limbs. The ferjeant now came up to Booth to make an apology for the behaviour of the foldier, when of a fudden he turned almoft as pale as Amelia herfelf. He ftood filent whilft Booth was employed in comforting and recovering his wife; and then addreffing himfelf to him, faid, 'Blefs 'me, lieutenant! could I imagine it had been your 'honour; and was it my little mafter that the rafcal 'ufed fo! I am glad I did not know it, for I fhould 'certainly have run my halbert into him.'

Booth prefently recognized his old faithful fervant Atkinfon, and gave him a hearty greeting; faying, he was very glad to fee him in his prefent fituation. 'Whatever I am,' anfwered the ferjeant, 'I fhall al'ways think I owe it to your honour.' Then taking the little boy by the hand, he cried, 'What a vaft fine 'young gentleman mafter is grown!' and curfing the foldier's inhumanity, fwore heartily he would make him pay for it.

As Amelia was much difordered with her fright, fhe did not recollect her fofter-brother, till he was introduced to her by Booth; but fhe no fooner knew him, than fhe beftowed a moft obliging fmile on him; and calling him by the name of honeft Joe, faid fhe was

heartily

heartily glad to ſee him in England. 'See, my dear,' cries Booth, 'what preferment your old friend is come 'to. You would ſcarce know him, I believe, in his 'preſent ſtate of finery.'---'I am very well pleaſed to 'ſee it,' anſwered Amelia; 'and I wiſh him joy of 'being made an officer, with all my heart.' In fact, from what Mr. Booth ſaid, joined to the ſerjeant's laced coat, ſhe believed that he had obtained a commiſſion. So weak and abſurd is human vanity, that this miſtake of Amelia's poſſibly put poor Atkinſon out of countenance; for he looked at this inſtant more ſilly than he had ever done in his life; and making her a moſt reſpectful bow, muttered ſomething about obligations, in a ſcarce articulate or intelligible manner.

The ſerjeant had, indeed, among many other qualities, that modeſty which a Latin author honours by the name of ingenuous: nature had given him this, notwithſtanding the meanneſs of his birth; and ſix years converſation in the army had not taken it away. To ſay the truth, he was a noble fellow; and Amelia, by ſuppoſing he had a commiſſion in the guards, had been guilty of no affront to that honourable body.

Booth had a real affection for Atkinſon, though in fact he knew not half his merit. He acquainted him with his lodgings, where he earneſtly deſired to ſee him.

Amelia, who was far from being recovered from the terrors into which the ſeeing her huſband engaged with the ſoldier had thrown her, deſired to go home; nor was ſhe well able to walk without ſome aſſiſtance. While ſhe ſupported herſelf therefore on her huſband's arm, ſhe told Atkinſon, ſhe ſhould be obliged to him, if he would take care of the children. He readily accepted the office; but, upon offering his hand to Miſs, ſhe refuſed, and burſt into tears. Upon which, the tender mother reſigned Booth to her children, and put herſelf under the ſerjeant's protection; who conducted her ſafe home, though ſhe often declared ſhe feared ſhe

ſhould drop down by the way. The fear of which ſo affected the ſerjeant, (for beſides the honour which he himſelf had for the lady, he knew how tenderly his friend loved her) that he was unable to ſpeak; and had not his nerves been ſo ſtrongly braced, that nothing could ſhake them, he had enough in his mind to have ſet them a trembling equally with the lady.

When they arrived at the lodgings, the miſtreſs of the houſe opened the door, who, ſeeing Amelia's condition, threw open the parlour, and begged her to walk in; upon which ſhe immediately flung herſelf into a chair, and all preſent thought ſhe would have fainted away. However, ſhe eſcaped that miſery; and having drank a glaſs of water with a little white wine mixed in it, ſhe began, in a little time to regain her complexion; and at length aſſured Booth that ſhe was perfectly recovered; but declared ſhe had never undergone ſo much, and earneſtly begged him never to be ſo raſh for the future. She then called her little boy, and gently chid him; ſaying, 'You muſt never do ſo more, Billy; 'you ſee what miſchief you might have brought upon 'your father; and what you have made me ſuffer.'--- 'La, mama!' ſaid the child; 'what harm did I do? 'I did not know that people might not walk in the 'green fields in London. I am ſure if I did a fault, 'the man puniſhed me enough for it; for he pinched 'me almoſt through my ſlender arm.' He then bared his little arm, which was greatly diſcoloured by the injury it had received. Booth uttered a moſt dreadful execration at this ſight; and the ſerjeant, who was now preſent, did the like.

Atkinſon now returned to his guard, and went directly to the officer to acquaint him with the ſoldier's inhumanity; but he, who was about fifteen years of age, gave the ſerjeant a great curſe, and ſaid the ſoldier had done very well, for that idle boys ought to be corrected. This however did not ſatisfy poor Atkinſon, who, the next day, as ſoon as the guard was relieved, beat the fellow moſt unmercifully, and told him

he would remember him as long as he staid in the regiment.

Thus ended this trifling adventure, which some readers will, perhaps, be pleased with seeing related at full length. None, I think, can fail drawing one observation from it; namely, how capable the most insignificant accident is of disturbing human happiness, and of producing the most unexpected and dreadful events, a reflection which may serve to many moral and religious uses.

This accident produced the first acquaintance between the mistress of the house and her lodgers; for hitherto they had scarce exchanged a word together. But the great concern which the good woman had shewn on Amelia's account at this time, was not likely to pass unobserved, or unthanked, by either the husband or wife. Amelia, therefore, as soon as she was able to go up stairs, invited Mrs. Ellison (for that was her name) to her apartment, and desired the favour of her to stay to supper. She readily complied; and they passed a very agreeable evening together, in which the two women seemed to have conceived a most extraordinary liking to each other.

Though beauty in general doth not greatly recommend one woman to another, as it is too apt to create envy; yet, in cases where this passion doth not interfere, a fine woman is often a pleasing object even to some of her own sex: especially when her beauty is attended with a certain air of affability, as was that of Amelia in the highest degree. She was, indeed, a most charming woman; and I know not whether the little scar on her nose did not rather add to than diminish her beauty.

Mrs. Ellison therefore was as much charmed with the loveliness of her fair lodger, as with all her other engaging qualites. She was, indeed, so taken with Amelia's beauty, that she could not refrain from crying out, in a kind of transport of admiration, 'Upon my word, Captain Booth, you are the happiest man

'in the world: your lady is so extremely handsome, 'that one cannot look at her without pleasure!'

This good woman herself had none of these attractive charms to the eye. Her person was short, and immoderately fat; her features were none of the most regular; and her complexion (if indeed she ever had a good one) had considerably suffered by time.

Her good humour and complaisance, however, were highly pleasing to Amelia. Nay, why should we conceal the secret satisfaction which that lady felt from the compliments paid to her person? since such of my readers as like her best, will not be sorry to find that she was a woman.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing various Matters.

A Fortnight had now passed, since Booth had seen or heard from the colonel; which did not a little surprize him, as they had parted so good friends, and as he had so cordially undertaken his cause concerning the memorial, on which all his hopes depended.

The uneasiness which this gave him, farther encreased on finding his friend refused to see him: for he had paid the colonel a visit at nine in the morning, and was told, he was not stirring; and at his return back an hour afterwards, the servant said, his master was gone out: of which Booth was certain of the falshood; for he had, during that whole hour, walked backwards and forwards within sight of the colonel's door, and must have seen him if he had gone out within that time.

The good colonel, however, did not long suffer his friend to continue in this deplorable state of anxiety; for the very next morning Booth received his memorial inclosed in a letter, acquainting him that Mr. James had mentioned his affair to the person he proposed; but that the great man had so many engagements on his hands, that it was impossible for him to make any farther promises at this time.

The cold and distant style of this letter, and indeed the whole behaviour of James, so different to what it had been

been formerly, had something so mysterious in it, that it greatly puzzled and perplexed poor Booth; and it was so long before he was able to solve it, that the reader's curiosity will, perhaps, be obliged to us for not leaving him so long in the dark as to this matter. The true reason then of the colonel's conduct was this: his unbounded generosity, together with the unbounded extravagance, and consequently the great necessity of Miss Matthews, had at length overcome the cruelty of that lady, with whom he likewise had luckily no rival. Above all, the desire of being revenged on Booth, with whom she was to the highest degree enraged, had perhaps contributed not a little to his success: for she had no sooner condescended to a familiarity with her new lover, and discovered that Captain James, of whom she had heard so much from Booth, was no other than the identical colonel, than she employed every art of which she was mistress, to make an utter breach of friendship between these two. For this purpose, she did not scruple to insinuate, that the colonel was not at all obliged to the character given of him by his friend; and to the account of this latter she placed most of the cruelty which she had shewn to the former.

Had the colonel made a proper use of his reason, and fairly examined the probability of the fact, he could scarce have been imposed upon to believe a matter so inconsistent with all he knew of Booth, and in which that gentleman must have sinned against all the laws of honour without any visible temptation. But in solemn fact, the colonel was so intoxicated with his love, that it was in the power of his mistress to have persuaded him of any thing; besides, he had an interest in giving her credit: for he was not a little pleased with finding a reason for hating the man, whom he could not help hating without any reason, at least, without any which he durst fairly assign even to himself. Henceforth therefore he abandoned all friendship for Booth, and was more inclined to put him out of the world, than to endeavour any longer at supporting him in it.

Booth communicated this letter to his wife, who endeavoured, as usual, to the utmost of her power, to console him under one of the greatest afflictions which, I think, can befal a man; namely, the unkindness of a friend: but he had luckily at the same time the greatest blessing in his possession, the kindness of a faithful and beloved wife. A blessing, however, which, though it compensates most of the evils of life, rather serves to aggravate the misfortune of distressed circumstances, from the consideration of the share which she is to bear in them.

This afternoon Amelia received a second visit from Mrs. Ellison; who acquainted her that she had a present of a ticket for the oratorio, which would carry two persons into the gallery; and therefore begged the favour of her company thither.

Amelia with many thanks acknowledged the civility of Mrs. Ellison, but declined accepting her offer; upon which Booth very strenuously insisted on her going, and said to her, 'My dear, if you knew the satisfaction I 'have in any of your pleasures, I am convinced you 'would not refuse the favour Mrs. Ellison is so kind to 'offer you; for as you are a lover of music, you, who 'have never been at an oratorio, cannot conceive how 'you will be delighted."---'I well know your good-'ness, my dear,' answered Amelia; 'but I cannot 'think of leaving my children without some person 'more proper to take care of them than this poor girl.' Mrs. Ellison removed this objection, by offering her own servant, a very discreet matron, to attend them; but notwithstanding this, and all she could say, with the assistance of Booth, and of the children themselves, Amelia still persisted in her refusal; and the mistress of the house, who knew how far good-breeding allows persons to be pressing on these occasions, took her leave.

She was no sooner departed, than Amelia, looking tenderly on her husband, said, 'How can you, my dear 'creature, think that music hath any charms for me 'at this time! Or, indeed, do you believe that I am

'ca-

'capable of any ſenſation worthy the name of pleaſure, 'when neither you nor my children are preſent, nor 'bear any part of it?'

An officer of the regiment to which Booth had formerly belonged, hearing from Atkinſon where he lodged, now came to pay him a viſit. He told him, that ſeveral of their old acquaintance were to meet the next Wedneſday at a tavern, and very ſtrongly preſſed him to be one of the company. Booth was, in truth, what is called a hearty fellow, and loved now and then to take a chearful glaſs with his friend; but he excuſed himſelf at this time. His friend declared he would take no denial: and he growing very importunate, Amelia at length ſeconded him. Upon this Booth anſwered, 'Well, my dear, ſince you deſire me, I will 'comply; but on one condition, that you go at the 'ſame time to the oratorio.' Amelia thought this requeſt reaſonable enough, and gave her conſent: of which Mrs. Elliſon preſently received the news, and with great ſatisfaction.

It may, perhaps, be aſked, why Booth could go to the tavern, and not to the oratorio with his wife. In truth, then, the tavern was within hallowed ground, that is to ſay, in the verge of the court: for of five officers that were to meet there, three, beſides Booth, were confined to that air, which hath been always found extremely wholeſome to a broken military conſtitution. And here, if the good reader will pardon the pun, he will ſcarce be offended at the obſervation; ſince, how is it poſſible that, without running in debt, any perſon ſhould maintain the dreſs and appearance of a gentleman, whoſe income is not half ſo good as that of a porter? It is true, that this allowance, ſmall as it is, is a great expence to the publick; but if ſeveral more unneceſſary charges were ſpared, the public might, perhaps, bear a little increaſe of this without much feeling it. They would not I am ſure, have equal reaſon to complain at contributing to the maintenance of a ſet of brave fellows, who,

who, at the hazard of their health, their limbs and their lives, have maintained the safety and honour of their country; as when they find themselves taxed to the support of a set of drones, who have not the least merit or claim to their favour; and who without contributing in any manner to the good of the hive, live luxuriously on the labours of the industrious bee.

CHAP. IX.

In which Amelia, with her Friend, goes to the Oratorio.

NOTHING happened between the Monday and the Wednesday, worthy a place in this history. Upon the evening of the latter, the two ladies went to the oratorio, and were there time enough to get the first row in the gallery. Indeed there was only one person in the house when they came: for Amelia's inclinations, when she gave a loose to them, were pretty eager for this diversion, she being a great lover of music, and particularly of Mr. Handel's compositions. Mrs. Ellison was, I suppose, a great lover likewise of music, for she was more impatient of the two; which was rather the more extraordinary, as these entertainments were not such novelties to her as they were to poor Amelia.

Though our ladies arrived full two hours before they saw the back of Mr. Handel; yet this time of expectation did not hang extremely heavy on their hands; for besides their own chat, they had the company of a gentleman, whom they found at their first arrival in the gallery; and who, though plainly, or rather roughly dressed, very luckily for the women, happened not only to be well-bred, but a person of very lively conversation. The gentleman on his part seemed highly charmed with Amelia, and in fact was so; for, though he restrained himself entirely within the rules of good-breeding, yet was he in the highest degree officious to catch at every opportunity of shewing his respect, and doing her little services. He procured her a book and wax-candle, and held the candle for her himself during the whole entertainment.

At

At the end of the oratorio, he declared he would not leave the ladies till he had ſeen them ſafe into their chairs or coach; and at the ſame time very earneſtly entreated that he might have the honour of waiting on them. Upon which Mrs. Ellison, who was a very good humoured woman, anſwered, 'Ay, ſure, Sir, if you pleaſe: you have been very obliging to us; and a diſh of tea ſhall be at your ſervice at any time:' and then told him where ſhe lived.

The ladies were no ſooner ſeated in their hackney coach, than Mrs. Ellison burſt into a loud laughter, and cried, 'I'll be hanged, Madam, if you have not made a conqueſt to-night; and, what is very pleaſant, I believe the poor gentleman takes you for a ſingle lady!'—'Nay,' anſwered Amelia, very gravely, 'I proteſt I began to think at laſt he was rather too particular, though he did not venture at a word that I could be offended at: but if you fancy any ſuch thing, I am ſorry you invited him to drink tea.'—'Why ſo?' replied Mrs. Ellison: 'are you angry with a man for liking you? if you are, you will be angry with almoſt every man that ſees you. If I was a man myſelf, I declare I ſhould be in the number of your admirers. Poor gentleman! I pity him heartily; he little knows that you have not a heart to diſpoſe of. For my own part, I ſhould not be ſurpriſed at ſeeing a ſerious propoſal of marriage; for I am convinced he is a man of fortune, not only by the politeneſs of his addreſs, but by the fineneſs of his linen, and that valuable diamond ring on his finger. But you will ſee more of him when he comes to tea.'—'Indeed I ſhall not,' anſwered Amelia; 'though I believe you only railly me; I hope you have a better opinion of me, than to think I would go willingly into the company of a man, who had an improper liking for me.' Mrs. Ellison, who was one of the gayeſt women in the world, repeated the words *improper liking* with a laugh; and cried, 'My dear Mrs. Booth, believe me, you are too handſome and

'too good-humoured for a prude. How can you affect 'being offended at what I am convinced is the greatest 'pleasure of womankind; and chiefly, I believe, of us 'virtuous women? for, I assure you, notwithstanding 'my gaiety, I am as virtuous as any prude in Europe.' ---'Far be it from me, Madam,' said Amelia, 'to 'suspect the contrary of abundance of women, who 'indulge themselves in much greater freedoms than I 'should take, or have any pleasure in taking: for I 'solemnly protest, if I know my own heart, the liking 'of all men, but of one, is a matter quite indifferent to 'me, or rather would be highly disagreeable.'

This discourse brought them home; where Amelia finding her children asleep, and her husband not returned, invited her companion to partake of her homely fare, and down they sat to supper together. The clock struck twelve; and no news being arrived of Booth, Mrs. Ellison began to express some astonishment at his stay, whence she launched into a general reflection on husbands, and soon passed to some particular invectives on her own. 'Ah, my dear Madam,' says she, 'I 'know the present state of your mind by what I have 'myself often felt formerly. I am no stranger to the 'melancholy tone of a midnight clock. It was my 'misfortune to drag on a heavy chain of above fifteen 'years with a sottish yoke-fellow. But how can I 'wonder at my fate, since I see even your superior 'charms cannot confine a husband from the bewitching 'pleasures of a bottle!'---'Indeed, Madam,' says Amelia, 'I have no reason to complain; Mr. Booth is 'one of the soberest of men: but now and then to 'spend a late hour with his friend is, I think, highly 'excusable.'---'O no doubt,' cries Mrs. Ellison, 'if 'he can excuse himself; but if I was a man-----' Here Booth came in, and interrupted the discourse. Amelia's eyes flashed with joy the moment he appeared; and he discovered no less pleasure in seeing her. His spirits were indeed a little elevated with wine, so as to heighten his good-humour, without the least disordering

tering his understandings, and made him such delightful company, that though it was past one in the morning, neither his wife nor Mrs. Ellison thought of their beds during a whole hour.

Early the next morning the serjeant came to Mr. Booth's lodgings, and with a melancholy countenance acquainted him, that he had been the night before at an alehouse, where he heard one Mr. Murphy, an attorney, declare, that he would get a warrant backed against one Captain Booth at the next board of green cloth. 'I hope, Sir,' said he, 'your honour will pardon me, 'but by what he said, I was afraid he meant your 'honour; and therefore I thought it my duty to tell 'you, for I knew the same thing happen to a gentleman 'here the other day.'

Booth gave Mr. Atkinson many thanks for his information. 'I doubt not,' said he, 'but I am the 'person meant; for it would be foolish in me to deny 'that I am liable to apprehensions of that sort.' 'I 'hope, Sir,' said the serjeant, 'your honour will soon 'have reason to fear no man living; but, in the mean 'time, if any accident should happen, my bail is at your 'service as far as it will go; and I am a housekeeper, 'and can swear myself worth one hundred pounds.' Which hearty and friendly declaration received all those acknowledgments from Booth which it really deserved.

The poor gentleman was greatly alarmed at this news; but he was altogether as much surprized at Murphy's being the attorney employed against him, as all his debts, except only to Captain James, arose in the country, where he did not know that Mr. Murphy had any acquaintance. However, he made no doubt that he was the person intended, and resolved to remain a close prisoner in his own lodgings, till he saw the event of a proposal which had been made him in the evening before at the tavern, where an honest gentleman, who had a post under the government, and who was one of the company, had promised to serve him with the secretary at war; telling him, that

he made no doubt of procuring him whole pay in a regiment abroad, which in his present circumstances was very highly worth his acceptance; when indeed that, and a gaol, seemed to be the only alternatives that offered themselves to his choice.

Mr. Booth and his lady spent that afternoon with Mrs. Ellison. An incident which we should scarce have mentioned, had it not been that Amelia gave, on this occasion, an instance of that prudence which should never be off it's guard in married women of delicacy: for before she would consent to drink tea with Mrs. Ellison, she made conditions, that the gentleman who had met them at the oratorio should not be let in. Indeed, this circumspection proved unnecessary in the present instance, for no such visitor ever came; a circumstance which gave great content to Amelia: for that lady had been a little uneasy at the raillery of Mrs. Ellison, and had upon reflection magnified every little compliment made her, and every little civility shewn her by the unknown gentleman, far beyond the truth. These imaginations now all subsided again; and she imputed all that Mrs. Ellison had said, either to raillery or mistake.

A young lady made a fourth with them at whist, and likewise staid the whole evening. Her name was Bennet. She was about the age of five and twenty; but sickness had given her an older look, and had a good deal diminished her beauty; of which, young as she was, she plainly appeared to have only the remains in her present possession. She was in one particular the very reverse of Mrs. Ellison, being altogether as remarkably grave as the other was gay. This gravity was not however attended with any sourness of temper: on the contrary, she had much sweetness in her countenance, and was perfectly well bred. In short, Amelia imputed her grave deportment to her ill health, and began to entertain a compassion for her, which in good minds, that is to say, in minds capable of compassion, is certain to introduce some little degree of love or friendship.

Amelia was, in short, so pleased with the conversation of this lady, that, though a woman of no impertinent curiosity, she could not help taking the first opportunity of enquiring who she was. Mrs. Ellison said, that she was an unhappy lady, who had married a young clergyman for love; who, dying of a consumption, had left her a widow in very indifferent circumstances. This account made Amelia still pity her more, and consequently added to the liking which she had already conceived for her. Amelia therefore desired Mrs. Ellison to bring her acquainted with Mrs. Bennet, and said she would go any day with her to make that lady a visit. 'There need be no ceremony,' cried Mrs. Ellison, 'she is a woman of no form: and as I saw plainly she was extremely pleased with Mrs. Booth, I am convinced I can bring her to drink tea with you any afternoon you please.'

The two next days Booth continued at home, highly to the satisfaction of his Amelia, who really knew no happiness out of his company, nor scarce any misery in it. She had, indeed, at all times so much of his company when in his power, that she had no occasion to assign any particular reason for his staying with her, and consequently it could give her no cause of suspicion.

On Saturday one of her children was a little disordered with a feverish complaint, which confined her to her room, and prevented her drinking tea in the afternoon with her husband, in Mrs. Ellison's apartment, where a noble lord, a cousin of Mrs. Ellison's, happened to be present: for though that lady was reduced in her circumstances, and obliged to let out part of her house in lodgings, she was born of a good family, and had some considerable relations.

His lordship was not himself in any office of state; but his fortune gave him great authority with those who were. Mrs. Ellison, therefore, very bluntly took an opportunity of recommending Booth to his

'I wish your lordship would make him for. It would 'be but an act of justice; and I know it is in your 'power to do much greater things.' She then mentioned Booth's services, and the wounds he had received at the siege of which she had heard a faithful account from Amelia. Booth blushed, and was as silent as a young virgin at the hearing her own praises. His lordship answered, 'Cousin Ellison, you know you 'may command my interest; nay, I shall have a pleasure in serving one of Mr. Booth's character: for my 'part, I think merit in all capacities ought to be encouraged; but I know the ministry are greatly pestered with solicitations at this time. However, Mr. 'Booth may be assured I will take the first opportunity; 'and, in the mean time, I shall be glad of seeing him 'any morning he pleases.' For all these declarations Booth was not wanting in acknowledgements to the generous peer, any more than he was in secret gratitude to the lady who had shewn so friendly and uncommon a zeal in his favour.

The reader, when he knows the character of this nobleman, may, perhaps, conclude that his favour to Booth alone was a lucky circumstance; for he was so passionate an admirer of women, that he could hardly have escaped the attraction of Amelia's beauty. And few men, as I have observed, have such disinterested generosity, as to serve a husband the better because they are in love with his wife, unless she will consent to pay a price beyond the reach of a virtuous woman.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.